This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google books

https://books.google.com

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 00696879 0

ESSEX UNITS IN THE WAR 1914–1919.

THE ESSEX YEOMANRY VOL. 3

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

VWZH
Burrows

Digitized by Google

v. 3

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

GUIDON OF THE ESSEX YEOMANRY.

Digitized by Google

THE ESSEX YEOMANRY

CONTAINING ALSO A SHORT ACCOUNT OF MILITARY ACTIVITY IN THE COUNTY DURING THE NAPOLEONIC WAR.

BY

JOHN WM. BURROWS, F.S.A.

Published by arrangement with the Essex Territorial Army Association.

Southend-on-Sea:
JOHN H. BURROWS & SONS, LTD,
"STANDARD" PRINTING WORKS.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
360703A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1928 L

Digitized by Google

FOREWORD.

(By LIEUT.-COLONEL F. H. D. C. WHITMORE, C.M.G., D.S.O., late commanding the Essex Yeomanry).

THIS volume will be valued not only by those of us who have had the fortune to serve in the Essex Yeomanry, but also by the County as being the only connected history of its senior Territorial unit from its earliest days to the present time.

The History unfolds reminiscences of the past which would inevitably have been lost had it not been for the untiring perseverance and energy of the author.

It shows forcibly the prominent part which the County of Essex has always taken in the defence of its country's honour. It shows also the spirit in which those who have contributed towards their County's traditions have carried out their purpose. It places on record the patriotism displayed by the inhabitants of the County generally whenever the Constitution of the Country has been threatened.

As a Cavalry officer, I welcome the references to the varied nature of the work that Cavalry were called upon to perform in the Great War. This volume illustrates the necessity of the officers and other ranks of the Regiment maintaining themselves as highly efficient cavalrymen and at the same time to be in readiness, not only to take their turn in the trenches, but also to carry out most of the duties of infantrymen.

The Author has taken an unlimited amount of trouble, with enormous success, in tracing out the previous history of the Yeomanry Cavalry. He has spared no time or energy in following the fortunes of the Regiment from the date of its re-formation by General Colvin in 1901 up to the date of mobilization in order to help to make history in the Great War of 1914-1918. He has related the various episodes of the War, together with the achievements of the Essex Yeomanry, in such a manner as will remind us of the many hardships which were common to all who served overseas. This volume also recalls to us not only the dear friends whom we lost, but also the many friends we made whom we should probably never have met if it had not been for our eventful four and a half years in France.

Francis H. D. C. Whitmore.

S & B MAR 2 1928

Digitized by Google

AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

IN this volume—the third of the series describing the services of Essex units in the recent War—is given the narrative of the Essex Yeomanry, which, proceeding overseas in November, 1914, served with much distinction in France and Belgium until April, 1918, when the Regiment was dissolved and a squadron attached to each of the three regular cavalry regiments of the 1st Cavalry Brigade. With this formation the majority of the officers and men served for the remainder of the war and thus took part in the memorable march to the Rhine. The Essex Yeomanry was a distinctively Essex unit and could claim, in March, 1918, notwithstanding the heavy casualties of war, that it contained an overwhelming proportion of Essex men. Indeed, it was not until the losses consequent upon the capture of Monchy-le-Preux, in April, 1917, that there was influx of personnel recruited other than in the County of Essex.

The stirring story narrated in the following pages—battle incidents which must live long among Essex men and women—has been gleaned from several sources. The divisional, brigade and regimental war diaries have been extensively utilized and, in addition, the writer has had permission to quote as lengthily as may be necessary from Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore's book, "The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War," which is an invaluable and accurate store of information. The late Private E. E. Tompkins' reminiscences, particularly of Monchy, contributed to *The Southend Standard*, have been most useful. Then, too, Major A. Buxton's book, "Sport in Peace and War," has been of great service in depicting the lighter side of campaigning. In addition, officers and others serving with the Regiment have been always willing to contribute extracts from their diaries, letters and personal recollections, and by this means to add the human touch without which the narrative must have been no better than an itinerary. To Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O., who commanded the Regiment during the greater part of its service on the Western Front, the writer expresses his most grateful thanks for ungrudging and ever-ready help, advice and encouragement. To Lieut.-Colonel Eustace Hill, D.S.O., Lieut.-Colonel the Hon. Alwyn H. F. Greville, C.V.O., Major P. C. G. Hayward, M.B.E., Major G. Gold, Major A. Buxton, D.S.O., Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C., Major J. O. Parker, Captain J. C. Chaplin, M.C., Captain H. H. Gepp, Captain O. T. Frith, R.F.A., Captain Stacy Bates, R.F.A., and Mr. E. C. Collins hearty thanks are also given. Many of the humorous and

Digitized by Google

descriptive stories have been contributed by Major Parker. The sketches illustrating the actions in which the Essex Yeomanry played a part have been prepared by Captain D. H. Burles, who, before serving with the Middlesex Regiment, was a well-known and popular member of the Essex Yeomanry. This generous help has made easy a task which would otherwise have proved most difficult to undertake. The map at the end of the volume entailed three days' continuous work.

The History Sub-Committee of the Essex Territorial Association have cordially co-operated and thanks are again accorded to Brigadier-General Colvin, C.B. (Chairman), and Lieut.-Colonel E. U. Bradbridge for their prompt assistance. The staff of the War Records Office (and in particular Major A. F. Becke, R.E., and Mr. E. A. Dixon) have rendered every possible aid, as also the Librarian of the War Office and the Assistant Librarian (Mr. W. Y. Baldry), whilst Mr. H. W. Tompkins, F.R.Hist.S., has been very helpful.

It was felt that the history of the Regiment would be incomplete without a reference to its predecessors in the county and in order to present a complete picture a description is also given of Essex at the time of the Napoleonic War, the period when the first troops of Yeomanry were raised and a regiment formed. Much of the information here given is presented in book form for the first time and if excuse be needed for touching upon some matters which are not strictly essential to the story of the Yeomanry, the author urges that to understand the causes leading to the remarkable volunteer movement between 1798 and 1818 it is necessary to outline the life of that period. Reference has been also made to the greatest fighting figure of that day, Admiral Sir Eliab Harvey, G.C.B., who gained much glory for Essex as captain of the "Temeraire" at Trafalgar. For this purpose Lieut.-General Sir Francis Lloyd, G.C.V.O., K.C.B., of Rolls Park, has most kindly placed unpublished documents and portraits at my disposal.

Much valuable information has been obtained from the records kept by the Clerk of the Peace (Mr. J. H. Goold). Another most fruitful and important source has been the file of *The Essex Chronicle*, to the proprietors of which, and in particular to Mr. J. O. Thompson, O.B.E., special acknowledgment is due for their generous kindness. The file of this newspaper, stretching back 160 years, is a unique record of Essex history and, perhaps, some day it may be possible to secure public custody for the volumes and the preparation of an index. *The Essex Review* has been also of considerable use, particularly the articles therein by the late Sir Thomas Barrett Lennard. Acknowledgments are also made to Major N. A. C. de H. Tufnell, Mr. W. Gurney Benham, F.S.A., Mr. H. G. Rickword, F.R.Hist.S., and Captain C. H. Norman. Mr. Findlay Muirhead,

Digitized by Google

M.A., of the "Blue Guides," has revised the place names, thus generously repeating the honorary service performed when Volume I of this series was published.

The writer has been struck by the mass of material, documentary and otherwise, which exists of this great epoch in Essex life. Trafalgar relics are carefully preserved in Rolls Park, the troop and company colours of the many volunteer corps are still in existence, and numerous letters and papers are stored in various places—sufficient to form an important section of a County Museum. Among the miscellaneous papers in the Office of the Clerk of the Peace is the letter, signed by the Speaker, which conveyed the thanks of the House of Commons to the Volunteers of Essex, and also the Prince Regent's approval to the formation of the 1st Essex Regiment of Yeomanry Cavalry. These, surely, deserve to be rescued from dusty oblivion and to be made easily accessible to succeeding generations as part of the vital story of Essex.

This volume could have been produced at a much earlier period, but it was thought it would be incomplete without the full list of battle honours, the fight for which is also related in these pages. It was not until August that the official decision in this important matter was gazetted.

JOHN WM. BURROWS.

Southend-on-Sea, October, 1925.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

1792-1914. Page

Essex as a Military Centre 1
French Revolution and Effect Upon the Country 3
War with France 5
Economic Progress 9
Rise in Food Prices 10
Military Activity 12
Famous Regiments in Garrison 13
Fear of Invasion 20
False Alarms 23
System of Warning 24
County System of Administration 26
System Organized for Removal of People and Stock 28
Method of Resisting the Invader 33
Formation of Volunteer Units 34
A Great Essex Sailor 35
The Essex Light Dragoons 40
Formation of Yeomanry Cavalry 44
Presentation of Colours 47
Duke of York's Inspection 49
The Volunteer Infantry 52
Efficiency in Training 56
Local Militia Formed 58
Conditions of Yeomanry Service 61
How the 1st Essex Yeomanry Cavalry Came into Being 64
The West Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, 1830-1877 71
Formation of the Essex Imperial Yeomanry 75
Annual Trainings 78
First Use of Motor Transport 81
Colonel Colvin's Farewell. 82
Mobilized for War Service 84

THE WAR, 1914-1919.

Departure for France 87
In the Ypres Salient 88
Frezenberg Ridge 93
The Charge 97
How "B" Squadron Held the Farm 99
Death of Lieut.-Colonel Deacon 101
Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore takes Command 103
Fox Hunt at Dawn 105
The Battle of Loos 106
A Yeoman's Example 110
1916 111
The Doomed Outfit 112

Digitized by Google

Hot Work in the Hohenzollern Redoubt 115
Pig Hunting at Fressin 120
Monchy-le-Preux 123
Making the Cavalry Track at Monchy 124
Good Friday in a Snowstorm 125
Position of the 37th Division 127
Advance of the 8th Cavalry Brigade 129
The Entry 130
Digging-In 132
The First Hour 133
Scene in the Village 134
The Relief 137
A Warrior's Homecoming 138
Incidents of the Fight 138
Colonel Whitmore's Conclusions 139
Fighting and Farming 141
In the "Bird Cage" 142
Tale of a Booby Trap 142
In Readiness for Cambrai 145
Christmas Box for the Brigade 146
A Fine Crop which the Germans Reaped 147
The Crisis and How it was Met 148
A Prophecy which Came True 151
Villers-Bretonneux 152
The March to Victory 157
Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore's Service with the 10th Hussars . . 158
First British Regiment Across the Rhine Commanded by an Essex Yeomanry Officer 161
The Regimental Spirit 162
The Draft Finding Units 164
Tactical Employment of the Essex Yeomanry 166
Re-Formation of the Regiment 170
The Fight for Battle Honours 172

APPENDICES.

No. 1 179
No. 2 182
No. 3 186
No. 4 189
No. 5 203

Digitized by Google

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	Page
Guidon with Battle Honours	Frontispiece
Admiral Sir Eliab Harvey, G.C.B.	35
"Fighting Temeraire" in Action at Trafalgar	37
Lieut.-General Sir Francis Lloyd, G.C.V.O., K.C.B.	40
Banner of the Freshwell Volunteer Cavalry	50
Medal Given to East and West Ham Volunteers	54
Lieut.-Colonel John Bawtree	59
Major William Tufnell	61
Flags of Local Militia Battalions	62
West Essex Yeomanry Cavalry and Artillery in Action	64
Lieut.-Colonel J. Archer Houblon, M.P.	67
Lieut.-Colonel George Palmer	71
Officer of West Essex Yeomanry	72
Brigadier-General R. B. Colvin, C.B.	75
Warrant Officers and N.C.O's. of Essex Imperial Yeomanry, 1903	76
Countess of Warwick after Distributing Prizes at Easton Lodge, 1905	79
Essex Yeomanry Recruiting Poster	81
Detachment of Essex Yeomanry, 1911	83
Fun at the Last Peace Camp	84
Last Parade at Melton prior to Embarkation	86
Sign of 3rd Cavalry Division	87
Officers of the Essex Yeomanry, 1914	89
The late Major A. Roddick	98
The late Lieut.-Colonel E. Deacon	100
Major A. Buxton, D.S.O., and Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C.	101
Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O.	103
The Double Pylon at Loos	106
8th Machine Gun Squadron (Essex Yeomanry)	111
Regimental Headquarters at Bonnay	113
Major Guy Gold and Major J. O. Parker	118
Signal Flag of Monchy-le-Preux	122
Monchy-le-Preux: The Pelves Road	135
ditto Looking East	136
ditto Taking the Horses Out of Action	139
Officers' Shelter, "Bird Cage"	142
Regimental Headquarters, Montecourt	147
Lieut.-Colonel Eustace Hill, D.S.O.	149
Regimental Headquarters, Villers-Bretonneux	155
R.S.M. Farrell	157
Officers, Warrant Officers and N.C.O.'s, 104th (Essex Yeomanry) Brigade, R.F.A.	170
Essex Imperial Yeomanry, Colchester, 1905	At End of Book

MAPS & SKETCHES.

System of Primary Signal Stations in Essex	25

Digitized by Google

Frezenberg Ridge: Scene of the Charge 93
ditto Disposition of Essex Yeomanry 97
Loos: Disposition of Essex Yeomanry 108
Trench System at the Hohenzollern Redoubt 115
Monchy-le-Preux: Movements of 8th Cavalry Brigade . . . 126
ditto Advance of "C" Squadron, Essex Yeomanry . . 130
ditto Disposition of 10th Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry 132
ditto As Seen from Arras Road 141
Villers-Bretonneux: Disposition of Essex Yeomanry 152
ditto From German Position 154
Essex Yeomanry's Itinerary in France and Belgium, 1914-1918 At End of Book

Digitized by Google

THE ESSEX YEOMANRY.

ESSEX AS A MILITARY CENTRE.

TIME will show whether the machinery of modern warfare, with the mechanic in overalls, carrying a spanner, will entirely oust the horseman in tunic and breeches, bearing sword and carbine. The close of the War in 1919 brought with it not only an intense campaign for retrenched expenditure in connection with the Services, but a drastic reduction of regiments, particularly mounted corps. The blow fell with severity upon county Yeomanry units, several of them with distinguished records in the late war. Their names are retained in many cases by the batteries of artillery or other mobile units into which they were transformed, as in the case of the Essex Yeomanry, but save for a dozen regiments, the old volunteer Yeomanry Cavalry as this generation knew it has disappeared from the Army List. The development of the art of war upon the mechanical side has made a constantly increased demand for expenditure and technical skill, but the changes which have deprived the country of the smart, well-set-up Yeomanry regiments, composed of some of the finest fighting elements of our population, evoke keen regret, though we admit the necessity. The cavalry regiments of the Regular Army are not recruited upon a territorial basis, but the Yeomanry units, incorporated in 1908 as part of the Territorial Army, bore the names of the counties to which they had proudly belonged, sometimes for a century or more.

The Essex Imperial Yeomanry Regiment was formed in November, 1901, in the closing months of the South African War. The nature of the warfare against the Boers had awakened the country to the need of additional mobile units, and Essex was among the counties which volunteered to meet the requirement. Although the Essex Yeomanry was, therefore, less than a score of years in age when the great testing time arrived, it was by no means the first mounted unit associated with the county in troublous times, and a glance at the history of its predecessors is essential if the spirit and prestige associated with the Essex Yeomanry are to be fully appreciated. Indeed, the temptation is strong to trace the development of the county mounted units from earliest times, through the mediæval era and on to the national convulsion known as the Civil War, wherein Essex had the closest personal interest in the matchless cavalry regiments which became known to fame as Cromwell's Ironsides,

Digitized by Google

and in those desperate Cavaliers, hemmed in at Colchester in 1648, who made the last great stand for Charles I in this county and paid forfeit with their lives.

It will be sufficient to commence this brief record with the reign of William and Mary. The Militia, both horse and foot, were at this time upon the reorganized basis sanctioned by Charles II in 1661. The obligation was to provide horsemen and footmen according to a graduated scale of property, and the Lord Lieutenant was entrusted with the control of the force, even to the organization of regiments and companies, the appointment of officers and the levy of rates for the supply of ammunition. It followed, Fortescue reminds us, "the precedent of the Statute of Winchester by which in 1285 Edward I revived and developed the military and police action of the hundred, the hue and cry, the watch and ward, the fyrd and militia of the counties. . . . . The statute, in fact, attempted to restore the ancient and popular military system of the English, which had lasted through the Conquest." Dr. Stubbs claimed the Statute of Winchester to be "a monument of the persistence of primitive institutions," but it lasted as a basis of organization only so long as it met the necessities of the nation when concerned with internal strife or expeditions to France and Flanders; it had to be expanded to meet responsibilities overseas. William soon exercised his influence in military affairs and upon the day of his proclamation (February, 1689) a letter was addressed to the Lords Lieutenant of Counties pointing out that the Militia had been neglected of late and that an account was to be furnished of its condition and particularly of its arms. In July of the following year the French Fleet was reported off Torbay and there was apprehension that the enemy intended to invade this country with "their utmost strength and malice." The Lord Lieutenant of Essex (Aubrey, Earl of Oxford) was ordered to march all the Horse and 1,500 Foot Militia to Romford, Brentwood, Stratford, Bow and Barking. Their embodiment was only temporary, for early in August both Horse and Foot were dismissed to their homes for the ingathering of the harvest. These were restless times, for in 1695 the Lord Lieutenant was ordered to raise his Militia Horse to meet another threat of invasion by the French, though there was also information that "divers wicked and traitorous persons have conspired to assassinate and murder His Majesty." The Lord Lieutenant was also ordered to seize all horses belonging to Papists and persons disaffected to the Government. The last reference to Horse Militia in Essex was in September, 1704, when Anne was Queen, the year of Blenheim and the capture of Gibraltar. Francis, Lord Guildford, as Lord Lieutenant, upon a threat of invasion was ordered to raise and muster the Horse Militia of the county and a document addressed to the "Chief Constables of the Hundred of Barstable" gives details of the order for assembling the troop in that

Digitized by Google

district. The soldiers were requested to appear at the colours completely armed, with buff coats, gauntlet buff gloves, able and sufficient horses, good carbines, pistols and swords, red cloaks, black hats laced with gold, jack boots and all other accoutrements. "The Crown," Epping, was the rendezvous. Further, the men were to be furnished with two days' pay and half a pound of powder, with bullet in proportion.

When the Militia were again embodied in 1759—the year of the capture of Quebec and thwarting of a formidable scheme of invasion by aggressive naval operations—there is no mention of Horse Militia, and the Militia Infantry was organized in two Battalions, the Eastern and Western. Horsemen appeared again in the Napoleonic War and then as Yeomanry or Volunteer Cavalry. To understand that era it is necessary to realize the state of feeling which had been provoked by the Revolutionary War in America. Coller, in his "People's History of Essex," reminds us that the aid which France lent to the secession movement caused fears of invasion and Essex became a place of armies. Camps were formed at Danbury, Warley, Lexden and other points, the troops including ten thousand Hessians. In 1778 King George III and his Queen reviewed the regiments at Warley and were the guests of Lord Petre at Thorndon Hall. Discontent was rife, however, with a war which was looked upon by many as fratricidal strife. Essex men and women had emigrated in thousands to New England. The county name-places there in many instances perpetuate the towns and villages from which their founders came. Sons of Essex were among the Pilgrim Fathers. This feeling of kinship was a goad to protest when the burdens of the war pressed heavily on the people and at Chelmsford in January, 1780, a petition was approved, pointing out that the war had involved "a large addition to the national debt, a heavy accumulation of taxes, a rapid decline of the trade and manufactures and land rents of the Kingdom." A committee was appointed, as was the case in several other counties, to promote reform and secure the freedom of Parliament. Party feeling ran high, but the agitation died away after the conclusion of peace with the United States, when prosperity returned. Hardly had the nation recovered, however, than it was faced by a greater peril, war with Republican France, which broke out in 1793. Essex made a wonderful effort in response to the challenge, though for years thereafter "the dark shadow of famine lurked at the door of cottager and mechanic," whilst in 1795 and 1796 "the scarcity was so great that black bread began to make its appearance even at the tables of the well-to-do and wealthy."

FRENCH REVOLUTION AND EFFECT UPON THE COUNTY.

The bloodshed which accompanied the French Revolution and the execution of the French King aroused tremendous feeling and overwhelmed, for the time being, the movement

Digitized by Google

which had sprung up for a liberal franchise and freer electoral opportunity. Towards the close of 1792 and in the early months of 1793 there were meetings in almost every parish in Essex denouncing the Revolution and upholding the British King and Constitution. Some of the phraseology used in the resolutions was thoroughgoing and direct. At Grays Thurrock on December 26th, 1792, it was declared that Great Britain "has the best laws, the best king and the best religion in the world." About the same time a Halstead meeting expressed its abhorrence of all seditious and illegal practices which might, directly or indirectly, tend to subvert their happy constitution or to spread a spirit of dissatisfaction and murmuring amongst the lower classes of people and that those present would at all times use their utmost endeavours to discountenance and suppress the same. The rector, curate, churchwardens and other inhabitants of Rettendon on the last day of the year 1792 passed a long resolution, which asserted that the adoption of the doctrine of equality would, even if practicable, terminate "in civil confusion and the total deprivation of the means of subsistence for the lower and most useful order of the community." They were also fully persuaded that inequality of rank, condition and degree was in the nature of things and by the wise appointment of Providence necessary to promote the real interest and happiness of every individual in the grand scale of human existence. At the White Hart Inn, Burnham, on January 8th, 1793, the Chairman (Rev. John Petvin) protested against the demands of desperate reformers who spread their "contagious poison for the base purposes of anarchy and sedition." The denunciations of the doctrine of the equality of man refer to the fierce and long sustained controversy provoked by the writings of Tom Paine, who had in 1791 published his "Rights of Man" in reply to Burke's "Reflections on the French Revolution." He was prosecuted for this attack on the constitution and was found guilty, but prior to sentence he left for France, where he was returned to the National Convention by the electors of the Pas de Calais. Favouring the more moderate course of banishment rather than the execution of the French king, he was expelled from the Convention by the Jacobins as a foreigner and imprisoned until his release in 1794. Paine returned to America, of which he was a citizen, in 1802 and the remainder of his life was spent in retirement. The favourite form of protest in Essex was to burn him in effigy, with a copy of "The Rights of Man" in one hand and a pair of stays in the other, a reminder that his father was a Norwich staymaker. At South Ockendon, for instance, in December, 1792, a gallows was erected across the High Street and an effigy of Paine was drawn up to the top, where it hung until the evening, when it "was burnt amidst the shouts and execrations of nearly 1,000 people." An effigy, with the face on one side white and on the other black, was burnt at Thorpe-le-Soken, after which, we are told, a hogshead of old

Digitized by Google

beer was broached and the farmers and others spent the evening in "a spirit of mirth, loyalty and cordiality." At Braintree, early in 1793, there was a parade in the market place, the inhabitants having white rods in their hands and wearing hats ornamented with blue cockades and labels, on which were inscribed, "The King and Constitution," "Long Live the King." The customary effigy having been consigned to the flames, "after giving plenty of beer to the populace" the company adjourned to the Bell Inn, where they spent "a most joyous night." Occasionally, after such demonstrations, a collection would be made on behalf of the poor. The banners at a similar demonstration at Great Clacton were inscribed: "King, Lords and Commons. The glorious Constitution of England, the envy of the world. Liberty and Property protected by Law."

Particular attention was paid to proprietors of licensed houses. At Wanstead, for instance, a public meeting requested the inn-holders and publicans to use their utmost endeavours to prevent unlawful or seditious meetings at any of their houses and to give assistance to the Magistrates in the punishment of such offences according to law, they also being required to enter into an engagement to that effect. As a practical measure the committee which had been nominated for the purpose of rebuilding the parish church were also appointed to meet once a month for three months to confer with each other and "to communicate whatever may be judged for the public welfare." The resolution passed by a meeting of the Dengie Hundred at Maldon also illustrates the administrative measures which were felt to be necessary for public security. The declaration ran: "That we pledge ourselves to enquire diligently into the conduct of the constables within our parishes, with an intent that if any one should be found neglectful of the duty he has sworn to discharge he may be exemplarily punished as the law directs. That as parochial tumults generally arise in public houses, we are determined to point out every publican in our respective parishes as unfit to obtain a licence who does not exert himself to preserve good order in his house, and on all occasions endeavour to secure the King's peace." Feeling ran high. A Bishop's Stortford man was obliged to publish an apology in *The Essex Chronicle*, explaining that he had circulated a report with intent to injure the characters of six other tradesmen who had met at the Reindeer Inn to settle accounts between them. The allegation was that on that occasion they drank several disloyal and seditious toasts, an accusation which was admitted to be groundless. At Chelmsford Quarter Session in 1793 a sea waller was sentenced to six months' imprisonment upon an indictment for having damned the King, the Nation and the Constitution.

WAR WITH FRANCE.

The war with France, which broke out in 1793, was to be a grimmer business than that of demonstrating and drinking healths.

Digitized by Google

For over twenty years, with a brief interval, it was to call out the uttermost strength of the nation in blood and finance. Essex quickly turned to considering measures to assist the recruitment of men for military service, but here, again, the difference of political point of view brought difference of opinion, though all expressed their desire to forward the best interests of the country. This conflict of view was emphasized at a "numerous and respectable" county meeting, convened by the High Sheriff and held at the Shire Hall, Chelmsford, on April 29th, 1794. The need for men was being felt and the intention was, by authority of a recent Act of Parliament, to raise a county subscription to be used for the purpose of augmenting the Militia units by addition to them of volunteer companies and to request the commanding officers of the two Essex battalions to take speedy measures to recruit the additional men, the enlistment to be for the period of the war. Resolutions to give effect to this scheme were moved by the Hon. John Olmius (New Hall, Boreham) and seconded by Mr. John Conyers (Copt Hall). The reasoned amendment, moved by Viscount Maynard and seconded by Lord Petre, declared, among other things, that "the present condition of this country does not require any immediate and unusual exertions for its internal defence" and unequivocally stated the meeting's sentiments to be for "such a peace as may be obtained consistently with the good faith, justice and policy of the British nation." The meeting rejected the amendment and carried the recruiting resolutions by a large and decisive majority. The arguments adduced on either side are worth recall. Lord Maynard denied there was any real danger of invasion and urged that the special measures proposed would take many men from harvest work. Mr. Western, Member for Maldon, was frankly unfavourable to shedding human blood to re-establish the monarchy in France, whilst another gentleman, named Mr. William Smith, delivered a fiery speech in opposition—"Were Englishmen to be bound hand and foot and to be told they ought not to meddle with politics, to submit to the recommendations of the executive without an opportunity of disputation and discussion? The people were not so incapable. They forced the conclusion of the American War." Mr. Barwis was equally outspoken in rejoinder and said those remarks came very unhandsomely from the opposition party, who would do nothing themselves and went about to the county meetings to persuade everybody else to do nothing—a strange way of proving their patriotism. Mr. Bosanquet believed that a vigorous prosecution of the war was the most direct road to a speedy peace. Discussion drifted away from high policy and there was much argument as to whether the raising of a subscription was unconstitutional, but the resolutions were carried, nevertheless, and supporters and opposition alike joined in subscribing over £6,000. Lord Petre reminded the meeting that he had subscribed in 1778 and

Digitized by Google

in 1784, and he should not refuse his subscription in 1794. The total within four months had reached nearly £14,000, but, judging by subsequent notices, all the donations were not paid in, nor was the money expended in full upon the object for which it was subscribed, for in April, 1797, Mr. T. F. Gepp, as secretary, summoned a meeting to consider "the propriety of calling on the subscribers at large for the payment of the remaining moiety of their subscription or any proportion thereof which may be thought necessary." Opposition to the war was prevalent in 1795, for in January of that year feeling was strong enough in Colchester for a town's meeting to be held to consider a proposed petition to the King, asking for the restoration of the blessings of peace, but the motion was decisively rejected by 105 votes to 36. The peace movement, though never without advocates, gradually lost force in Essex as the menace to Britain increased owing to Napoleon's hostile preparations against this country after his return from Egypt, whilst his later assumption of the imperial title alienated the sympathy of political reformers. "The Friends of Peace" celebrated Fox's birthday at Maldon in 1796 and, having dined well, drank over a dozen toasts. The sentiments thus expressed included "The sacred birthright of Britons—trial by jury" and "May the resources of this country never be employed to the injury of mankind," but ere the war had concluded the "True Blue Clubs" rose to much popularity, where, also after good dinners, many toasts were drunk in praise of King, Constitution and Religion. At Colchester, in 1807, there was a great gathering of the local Club, at the White Hart Hotel, one of the toasts being, "To the glorious 130 who have met in the room this day and may the Club continue to increase in numbers, though it cannot in patriotism." In May, 1797, a county meeting, at Chelmsford, discussed the propriety of sending a petition to the King praying for the removal of his ministers, similar meetings being held up and down the country. The opponents of the Government were still unable to effect their purpose. The motion for the petition was moved by Mr. Filmer Honeywood and seconded by Lord Maynard, whilst a counter proposition was put forward by the Hon. J. Olmius and Captain Harvey (afterwards Admiral Sir Eliab Harvey). A third motion, that for adjournment, was sponsored by Mr. Lewis Majendie (Castle Hedingham) and Mr. Conyers, and it was supported by a majority. A division was refused and the meeting was dissolved, so that no decision was arrived at. By 1808 there was a change of tone, although the divergence of political view remained. A county meeting was convened in October of that year to protest against the Convention of Cintra, whereby the French Army, under Junot, had agreed to evacuate Portugal and to be transported to France in British ships. Generals Burrard, Dalrymple and Wellesley were ordered home to appear before a court of enquiry and Sir John Moore appointed to the command in

Digitized by Google

the Peninsula. There was much anger in the nation when the terms became known, because it was felt that the British forces, under Wellesley, had been deprived of the full fruits of victory after Vimiero. How the wave of indignation affected Essex is worth the telling. It was in response to a requisition that the High Sheriff (Mr. J. Coggan) convened a meeting of "nobility, gentry, clergy and freeholders of the county" to consider the terms of the Convention. The proceedings commenced in the Shire Hall, but were subsequently transferred to the open air on account of the crowded state of the room. The leader of those dissatisfied with the terms was the celebrated Admiral, Earl St. Vincent, who had taken Rochetts, South Weald, and was breeding merino sheep there with some success. He felt that this was an occasion when loyalty to their King as well as their country required them to speak out and address His Majesty in the language of truth. The resolution in this sense was met by a motion for adjournment by Mr. Conyers, who urged that the officers who signed the obnoxious instrument had been brought to England and the King had expressed his determination to institute an inquiry. In those circumstances there could not exist any necessity for importuning the King still further or of implying want of confidence in the royal word. Mr. Harvey, of Feering House, had a series of resolutions maintaining their indisputable right of petitioning and remonstrating with the Crown. The High Sheriff declared there was a majority for adjournment and a scene of great excitement followed. Mr. Western attempted to address the meeting, but was refused a hearing, and then Sir Francis Vincent (Debden Hall), a former private secretary of Fox, demanded a poll, but the request was refused. The supporters of the resolution afterwards met at the Shire Hall, with Mr. Western in the chair. They expressed the view that a decided majority of the freeholders were against the motion for adjournment and protested against the action of the Sheriff. This decision was communicated by Lord St. Vincent to Mr. Coggan, with a request that he would call another meeting, but the Sheriff replied uncompromisingly from Wanstead: "At present I can only do myself the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your lordship's letter with its enclosure. I by no means see the propriety of troubling the County of Essex a second time upon the same business, when their disapprobation has been so completely expressed by the decision on the motion of adjournment." This attitude was vigorously dissented from, and the resolutions adopted, signed by Lord St. Vincent and his supporters, with the Sheriff's answer, were ordered to be inserted in the Press. The chief complaints were that no opportunity was given for several freeholders to speak, that when a demand for a poll was made the Sheriff declined to accede to it, and that the meeting was broken up with indecorous haste.

Digitized by Google

ECONOMIC PROGRESS.

At the time war broke out there was considerable movement in Essex for the improvement of economic conditions. In agriculture a spirit of enterprise was abroad. Arthur Young, whose writings upon scientific agriculture attracted national attention, had lived for five years (1765-1770) at Stamford Hall, Essex, and in 1771 had published, among other works, the "Farmer's Calendar," which reached its 215th edition in 1862. An Agricultural Society for the County was instituted at this period, owing much to the active interest of Mr. Lewis Majendie, of Castle Hedingham. In 1814, as soon as peace had come, agriculturists were busy appreciating the good points of Holstein cattle, which had been landed at Harwich for inspection. There were schemes afoot for the improvement of the navigation of the Chelmer and the Colne, and for the development of port facilities in the Thames and other rivers. District Associations for the detection of crime and the arrest of felons were in active operation. The importance of the wool industry was testified by the efforts which the growers made by combination to protect themselves against the buyers. In June, 1793, for instance, co-operation was sought with the farmers in Dengie and Rochford Hundreds to hold a wool fair at Maldon. Representatives from Rochford Hundred apparently agreed with the proposal, but a notice was subsequently issued by Mr. J. Vanderzee that the persons nominated as a committee for the Hundred were not appointed by the wool-growers in the district of Rochford to act for them. Their objection was, apparently, to removing the wool all the way to Maldon across the River Crouch, and the gentlemen who were elected at Maldon were deemed henceforth to be acting only for themselves. The wool was to be sold either by bulk or by sample, but before it could be offered in the mart the vendor had to obtain a permit, whilst the word "Wool" and the initial letters of the owners' names, three inches in length, were to be marked on each cloth. The sale was held on July 13th, but whilst many thousands of fleeces were offered, prices could not be agreed with the buyers. The growers would not sell their short wool for less than 1s. or other qualities for less than 9d. per lb. These prices could not be obtained and the wagons laden with the wool were instantly driven out of the town, the newspaper report adding, "which seems well calculated to bring the growers and buyers together at next year's wool mart on fair and equitable terms." On another occasion, at Harlow, Sir Montague Burgoyne bought all the wool from the growers because the buyers refused to pay the price fixed.

The first years of the war were years of scarcity and bad harvests. The later years, though also not without anxiety in respect of food supply, do not seem, according to the newspapers of the period, to have presented the same difficulties. The nation had

Digitized by Google

accustomed itself to war conditions. High prices of food and increased demand led to extended use of lands for corn-growing—enclosures of common grounds were frequent—and with agriculture prosperous the trades in small towns and villages dependent upon it also flourished. Queer gastronomic feats still proved a popular attraction. At Harwich, for instance, in 1796, three men drank 57 quarts of "upright" (a quart of beer with a quartern of gin in it) within the space of six and a half hours. On taking leave of each other, one of them declared he was thirsty and drank another pint before he left. Then at South Benfleet, in 1809, a young inhabitant undertook, for a small wager, to eat 18 eggs and 2lb. of bacon, with the addition of two twopenny loaves, a feat which he accomplished in less than eight minutes. He afterwards offered to eat, on an appointed day, at one meal, the hen from which the eggs came, and a companion also undertook to eat twelve raw eggs with their shells. Towards the close of the war, however, there was a manifest desire to support movements having an uplifting and educational tendency, such as the British and Foreign Bible Society and the establishment of elementary schools, both National and undenominational. The agitation for the abolition of the slave trade was strong in Essex and at a county meeting, held on July 27th, 1814, at which an address of congratulation was moved to the Prince Regent, there was regret expressed in the resolution that the French Government had not acceded to the complete abolition of the slave trade and requesting further efforts to secure that end at the approaching peace congress. Naval activity brought much work into North Essex shipyards. Three third rates, two fifth rates and five sloops and gun brigs were constructed at Harwich between 1794 and 1812, the whole, with the exception of two third rates, being built prior to 1805. Harwich had an established reputation in this respect from 1654 onwards. Mistley yard was busy, too, almost to the close of the war, for it provided a sloop in 1796, a fifth rate in 1798, a sloop in 1804, two sloops in 1806 and two more in 1807. The most famous Mistley ship was the "Amphion," a fifth rater, which sailed from Portsmouth with Nelson and the "Victory" in May, 1803. It was to the "Amphion" that the great Admiral shifted his flag temporarily when he had failed to meet Cornwallis and made all speed to the Mediterranean. Brightlingsea had a ship-building yard of repute, for after the rupture of the Peace of Amiens it turned out ten sloops and gunbrigs in four years. In all, these Essex ports built 27 vessels, mostly of the smaller type, from 1794 to 1812, whilst at the celebrated shipbuilding yard at Blackwall many ships of all ratings were supplied to the Admiralty.

RISE IN FOOD PRICES.

The rapid rise of food prices in the summer of 1795 led to a meeting of the millers of Chelmsford, Witham, Maldon, Braintree

Digitized by Google

and Coggeshall at the "Saracen's Head," Chelmsford, in July, to consider what measures could be taken "to accommodate the public with a supply of flour suitable to the exigencies of the times during the continuance of high prices of wheat," such measures to be submitted to a meeting of Justices at the ensuing Quarter Session. The millers recommended the manufacture of only one sort of flour for the next six weeks by separating bran from the meal, which bran should not weigh more than 7lb. to the bushel of wheat of the weight of 61lb. So general was the enforcement that Judges at Assize and Justices at Quarter Session used at their luncheon tables only that which was recommended for common use. The Justices further requested the generals commanding the camps in Essex not to permit the privates to wear hair powder. In parts of the county there were disturbances due to food scarcity. At Saffron Walden there was much commotion on July 27th from 8 a.m. to midnight. The crowd for several hours dominated the situation, forcing the bakers to sell flour at 2s. per peck and wheat at 7d. per quarter, butchers to supply meat at 4d. per lb. and grocers cheese at the same price. Order was not restored until the Surrey Fencibles arrived, having been hurriedly sent from Colchester. At Maldon a large crowd, principally composed of women, seized a consignment of fine flour in the granaries which was to be shipped to London. They conveyed it to the Town Hall to sell it at a reduced price, but a promise being given that it would not be loaded, this intention was not carried out. Conditions were easier in Rochford Hundred, for a barge employed in carrying flour to Rochford brought back her cargo to Maldon because the inhabitants there had enough wheat for their needs. Early in 1796 the farmers in Witham, in order to raise a fund for the support of the poor, decided to levy a voluntary rate of 1s. upon themselves. At Chelmsford a subscription was opened to supply the quality of bread in general use there, viz., two-thirds wheaten and one-third barley flour, and a first distribution was made to the poor of 500 quartern loaves at 6d. each, the intention being also to supply potatoes at 1s. per bushel. In this year payment of the labourers was recommended by the Essex Agricultural Society, according to the price of flour:—

2s. per peck.	... 16d.	per day.
2s.—2s. 8d. do. ...	... 18d.	do.
2s. 8d.—3s. 4d. do.	... 20d.	do.
3s. 4d.—4s. do. ...	... 2s.	do.

Unrest again manifested itself in March, 1801, and the Yeomanry troops were warned to be in readiness to assist the civil power should attempts be made to "prevent the free circulation of corn from one part of the country to another." Scarcity of currency caused the Lord Lieutenant and the members of the Grand Jury to issue a notice in March, 1797, that in order to preserve public credit they would not refuse to receive banknotes in payment of any sums of money paid to them. The Chelmsford

Digitized by Google

merchants issued the same intimation, adding, also, that they would accept the notes of Messrs. Crickitt and Co., bankers, of Chelmsford.

MILITARY ACTIVITY.

A beneficial effect of the war was the impulse to better means of communication. The necessity for improvement was most marked in Essex, where troops were tramping incessantly along its turnpike roads. Thousands of men were employed as garrisons—at Harwich, Colchester, Chelmsford, Maldon and Romford; and in the summertime upon the commons at Warley, Galleywood, Danbury and Lexden. Partly composed of regular regiments, they were mainly drawn from the Militia and thus there poured in a stream of men from Scotland, Ireland and Wales and the remoter counties of England. Essex ports were in constant touch with the garrison towns, for regular troops were frequently embarking for service on the Continent, particularly from Harwich, and also Tilbury, where a bridge of boats connected Essex with the Kent shore. Sometimes there was need for the utmost expedition in movement, as, for instance, when the Royal Bucks Militia, in 1798, on account of the French threat of invasion there, volunteered for service in Ireland and had to be moved as quickly as possible. This is how it was done. They were conveyed in 72 wagons and carts by two divisions to Dunmow and Epping, where another relay of carriages was provided to forward them on. In this manner they were sent to Northampton, where they embarked in barges and were taken by water to Bristol and there transhipped. The Warwickshire Militia were also sent to Ireland from Chelmsford by the same method, requiring a service of 88 wagons and carts. The kindly spirit of the Marquis of Buckingham, who commanded the Bucks Militia, was evidenced on this occasion by his offer to officers short of cash to honour their drafts upon his bankers, whilst the ladies without other accommodation were offered the hospitality of the Marchioness at Stowe until the return of the regiment. Surtees, in "Twenty-Five Years in the Rifle Brigade," mentions that he was stationed at Chelmsford with his Militia battalion in 1799, when he volunteered to join the regular army for service with the force in Holland, and marched from Chelmsford to Colchester, a distance of 21 miles. "The march was to me, I think, the severest I ever underwent, for, being young and totally unaccustomed to anything like it, the weight of musket, bayonet, accoutrements and knapsack appeared towards the latter end of the march to be intolerable, but I kept up, although excessively tired. This will show how necessary it is at all times to accustom troops destined for service to move in such order as they will be expected to do when they take the field—for, if unaccustomed to the carrying of the knapsack and to frequent marches with it for exercise, they will be utterly unable to perform any movement against, or in face of, an enemy with the celerity necessary to ensure success." Upon arrival at Colchester Surtees

Digitized by Google

volunteered into the 56th (2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment), then at Canterbury, the draft being carried in wagons, which reached the city in two days and a night without making a halt.

FAMOUS REGIMENTS IN GARRISON.

With the advent of war the two Militia battalions—West Essex and East Essex—were immediately embodied and, in due course, drafted to other parts of the country for service. Declaration of war with a neighbouring power meant much more than that for Essex, however. Security by sea and land was an instant concern. Yet there were some then, as now, who held that war was kindled by national unrighteousness, for in an issue of *The Essex Chronicle*, in the same year that war was declared, a correspondent earnestly endeavoured to persuade those who had been in the practice of travelling on Sunday by stage coaches to decline to do so in future lest they should add to the national guilt and bring down the displeasure of Heaven! A more practical proposal, however, was that of an engineer, named Dodd, which was laid before the Judges of Assize and the Justices in Quarter Session. It was none other than to tunnel a passage between Essex and Kent from Gravesend to Tilbury. A similar project was revived after the war of 1914-1919, with hope of a more successful issue. Essex was filled with troops and in 1794 there were three large camps garrisoned by Militia. At Warley there were the Hertfordshires, East Kents, Huntingdonshires, Pembrokeshires, Derbyshires, Shropshires, East Yorkshires and South Lincolns, under the Marquis of Townshend, a celebrated officer, who, after Wolfe's death, countersigned the capitulation which gave Canada to England; at Danbury there were West Norfolks, Notts, Cambridgeshires and Leicesters; at Harwich, Bedfordshires and North Lincolns. The troops at Warley were reviewed on Havering Plain in October by the Prince of Wales. In the summer of 1795 quite a change of garrisons occurred. At Warley there was the 2nd Regiment of Foot (Regulars) and, in addition, Militia battalions from Hertfordshire, West Norfolk, Nottinghamshire, West Kent, Bedford and South Norfolk; at Landguard, units from Cambridge and Huntingdon; at Danbury, part of the 1st Regiment of Foot (Regulars), Shropshires and East Kents; at Harwich, part of the 1st Regiment of Foot and the Derbyshires, with an additional camp at Lexden, occupied by 1st Dragoon Guards and the Surrey Fencibles. Later Galleywood Common was extensively used, and in 1798 the Ayrshire Fencibles were reviewed there, after which they volunteered for service in Ireland. In October of the same year, after the break up of the summer camps, Chelmsford alone held a garrison of 5,000 men, yet after the Peace of Amiens it was reported that in March, 1803, the barracks were empty, a regiment having just marched away after trouble with the civil population, as a result of which a

Digitized by Google

lieut.-colonel and two captains were placed on half-pay. Essex saw much of the grim sights of war. In 1796 there passed through Chelmsford, on their way to Colchester, one officer and 19 privates of the 22nd Regiment of Foot, a remnant of the 900 officers and men who had embarked for service in the West Indies.

Then came the rupture in 1803 and all was changed. The 1st Coldstream Guards and the 1st Third Guards (Scots) marched to Chelmsford at once, under Lord Cavan, who, upon leaving almost immediately to command the troops in the Isle of Wight, was succeeded by Major-General Finch. In Colchester garrison, too, were, among others, the 42nd (Black Watch) and 92nd (Gordon) Highlanders, the former having been welcomed by the inhabitants with ringing of bells in honour of their brilliant service in Egypt. Several regiments were stationed in Essex upon their return from that campaign and left a legacy in the form of ophthalmia, which lurked for years. In July, 1806, it was stated that Maldon barracks were to be converted into a hospital for the reception of soldiers afflicted with the dread disease. Two years later the Royals at Weeley were warned for foreign service, but the order was countermanded because of the appearance of ophthalmia and the barracks cleared of other troops to prevent the spread of the disease.

On Bradfield Heath, near Mistley, lay the East Essex and West Essex, Hertfordshire and Bucks Militia. Major-General Sir James Craig, an officer who had distinguished himself in the American War of Independence, was in command of the Eastern District and he was very active in forwarding defensive measures. These included the erection of a semaphore on the steeple of St. Mary's, Colchester, in line of communication with that at Brightlingsea Church, and onwards to the Metropolis. There was great activity to the north-west of Galleywood Common, where hundreds were employed upon the construction of a system of redoubts and a thirty gun battery. Accommodation was erected on Rettendon Common for troops protecting the upper waters of the River Crouch, whilst it was reported that extensive barracks were projected at Maldon, Harwich, Tendring, Thorpe and along various other parts of the Essex coast, though it is probable that they did not materialize in some cases. The mouths of the Rivers Crouch, Colne and Blackwater were each protected by a squadron of gun vessels, whilst, as illustrating popular feeling, in event of invasion, a coachmaster of Chelmsford and another of Ingatestone offered to provide, free of expense, eleven carriages and 54 horses, with drivers and attendants, for the transport of troops. An extensive artillery centre was established in barracks on Warley Common, whilst a large hospital was created at Dunmow. In 1804 Sir James Pulteney succeeded Sir James Craig in command of the troops and Moulsham Hall, then the seat of Sir Henry Mildmay, was taken for the incoming general and his staff. Subsequently the Government

Digitized by Google

had to pay the owner £950 for spoliation of the soil caused by the erection of public works, and £600 per annum whilst the Hall remained in occupation. In the summer of 1804 there were ten thousand troops encamped at Lexden Heath, including two battalions each of the Black Watch and the Gordons. Hanoverians marched into Chelmsford that year and a sad fatality overtook them, for a stable in which 70 were quartered caught alight and 13 were burnt to death before they could be rescued. The Scots Greys were stationed in the county for a short time in 1805—two troops at Chelmsford, two at Witham and four at Colchester—whilst in the same year the 12th Light Dragoons were at Romford. Military activity was intense in this year. It was reported in the Press that batteries established in the flats of Essex had been materially strengthened and repaired and that others were to be constructed. In addition to other units, there was a brigade of Scotch troops at Weeley, but it was soon broken up, for the 91st and 92nd Highlanders marched to Ramsgate to embark for foreign service. Other famous regiments to pass out of the county were the 5th and 95th, whilst in the following year the 21st Regiment embarked at Tilbury from Colchester. What excited probably more interest than the passage of troops was the convoy of a large quantity of dollars from the Continent, which, being landed at Harwich, was escorted through the County by Dragoons and subsequently lodged in the Tower of London. When what was popularly known as the Training Act was passed in 1806 the Minister for War proposed to station detachments from regiments of the line in various counties to assist in the training of the levies. Regiments which "either from connections previously formed or from other circumstances may be more acceptable to particular counties than others" were to be chosen and those selected for Essex were the 10th and 12th Foot. Whether this proposal materialized is not known, but it would be interesting to be informed why the two regiments mentioned were chosen. A curious case was heard at the Essex Assize, in July, 1807, when 26 soldiers of the 28th Regiment of Foot were indicted for conspiring to procure their discharge and obtain a pension by using a mixture in an endeavour to destroy the sight of the right eye, either temporarily or permanently. They were discharged upon undertaking to enter into a regiment on foreign service for life and were removed to Chelmsford barracks to await orders. In 1807 regiments were returning to Essex which had taken part in the expedition to Copenhagen, including the 4th, 23rd, 79th (Cameron Highlanders) and the German Legion. Peril arose from a threatened landing in the Channel Islands and there were hurried embarkations at Tilbury in May, 1808, of the 24th, 32nd and 61st Regiments, whilst the 35th, 76th and 87th (Royal Irish Fusiliers) were among the units encamped at Danbury. There was much excitement in Essex over the

Digitized by Google

concentration of 7,000 troops at Harwich, which it was surmised would form part of another expedition overseas. In February, 1809, war-worn regiments were welcomed on their return from Corunna. Some 340 men of the 92nd (Gordon) Highlanders and 150 of the 43rd (Oxford and Bucks Light Infantry) marched through Chelmsford to Colchester, and, we are told, "their countenances and general appearance were indicative of the hardship to which they had been exposed during the severe service they had encountered in Spain." Later in the same month 800 men of the 4th Regiment, the second division of the 92nd and 3rd battalion of 1st Royals, nearly 500 men, also marched into Chelmsford and again we are informed, "The whole of these troops are the remains of regiments lately disembarked from Spain. The general appearance of the men impressively depicted the hardship and fatigue they had undergone and the miseries and privations to which they had been exposed during the severe service they sustained." The arrival of the 92nd at Colchester was marked by the ringing of bells in honour of their valour at Corunna, where on the extreme left of the British position at Piedralonga two companies, with others of the 14th, had counter-attacked with spirit and expelled the French. One hopes that the 4th were also not forgotten, for they had manfully withstood the enveloping attack of four French battalions upon the extreme right of the position. As late as November, 1809, stragglers from Sir John Moore's Army were returning to duty, for a detachment of 200 belonging to different regiments marched through Essex. Then came the ill-omened Walcheren expedition. In May, 1809, the 3rd battalion of the Royals (1,000 strong) and the 43rd were being moved from Colchester to Harwich for embarkation, and in October Chelmsford was witnessing the return of fever-stricken regiments. When the 8th and 63rd came back the men were placed in different hospitals, the remnant of the 63rd being reinforced by a party of 150 of the older men and young recruits who had remained in Ipswich when the regiment left. The Royals landed at Harwich in January, 1810, with some 600 men, having lost over 400. They were not long at Chelmsford, for in February they left for Gibraltar.

It is interesting to note that at the by-election for Essex in 1810 Chelmsford was denuded of troops during the polling, which lasted fifteen days — the Cambridgeshire Militia were sent to Dunmow and Coggeshall, 3rd Battalion The Royals to Maldon, the 63rd to Ongar and Ingatestone, the 11th to Braintree and Bocking and the Royal Westmoreland Militia, 87th, 88th and detachments of the Staff Corps, Engineers, etc., to Billericay barracks. Disturbances in London caused a hurried movement of troops to the vicinity of the Metropolis in the summer of 1810, during which the 10th Hussars were reviewed by the Duke of Cambridge at Romford, His Royal Highness subsequently

Digitized by Google

being entertained by Sir Thomas Lennard at Belhus, Aveley. Brigadier-General Lumley resigned command of the garrison at Chelmsford in July, 1810, upon appointment to Wellington's Army in Portugal, with the apologetic recommendation from the Adjutant-General: "I never thought him a clever man, but he is zealous, active, obedient and as brave as a lion. He is not intended by nature for anything bigger than a brigade; but that, it is generally thought, he will do well." Troops passed out constantly for service in Spain and in 1812 four troops of Royal Horse Guards (Blue) were quartered in Essex before proceeding to the Peninsula, Romford having become the depot of that regiment. Chelmsford was to see much of the Irish Militia, for when the South Mayos left for Marlborough in 1813, on their return to Ireland, the Royal Meath marched in from Norman's Cross. There were grievances in respect of billeting, and in May, 1813, Mr. J. A. Houblon presented a petition from the innkeepers of the county representing that they had sustained a loss of 1s. per man daily when soldiers were billeted upon them, because of the high prices of butcher's meat and bread. The representation had some effect, for shortly afterwards an Act was passed increasing the allowance by 6d. per day. The Duke of Brunswick's Hussars marched through Chelmsford for Ipswich in June and the following month the 33rd Regiment, the Duke of Wellington's old command, made it a stopping place when moving to Harwich, 650 strong, to embark for service overseas. Another famous regiment, 2/5th, came into the Old Barracks, 150 strong, for a short time after arduous service in Spain under Colville. Reinforcements were constantly leaving for the army in Spain and in September, 1813, every man of the disposable forces in Essex were placed under orders for the Peninsula. With victory in sight, the war was pressed with the utmost vigour and the whole of the Royal Surreys, at Chelmsford, indicated their readiness to serve in Europe. These volunteers were drafted into other regiments and so depleted the strength of the Surreys that the pioneers and bandsmen had to be called upon to do guard duty. The volunteers from the Militia were so numerous that Provisional Battalions were created and the 2nd was formed at Danbury, being subsequently moved to Chelmsford Old Barracks and then to Portsmouth for service overseas.

With the abdication of Napoleon peace came. In April, 1814, prisoners of war from Norman's Cross, some of whom had been interned for ten years, marched through Essex to be exchanged for prisoners taken at Bergen-op-Zoom, an observer noting that they were "generally healthy and in high spirits." There were extensive peace celebrations throughout the county. Those at Chelmsford lasted three days in a week in June. On Tuesday a public dinner was held in the Shire Hall and on Wednesday arrangements were made for a general illumination of the town. The effect was marred by rain, but, nevertheless, there was much rejoicing.

Digitized by Google

A Press report stated: "No accidents occurred, but we must again take the opportunity of reprobating the use of pistols and guns upon such occasions, which were in several instances let off with double charges close to the heads of persons when least expected." On the Friday there was an open ball and supper in the Shire Hall, at which "all persons of respectability" were admitted, but the most unique celebration was that of the debtors in Chelmsford Gaol, who, by a subscription amongst themselves and friends, provided a plentiful repast and then burnt Napoleon's effigy and "with songs and sentiments continued to push the glass about as merrily as the circumstances would allow." Firing of cannon was a frequent feature of the festivities and at Great Yeldham the programme included the repeated discharge of 18 pieces of ordnance. Yet a war was still in progress, for at the time the peace celebrations were held detachments of troops were moving through Essex for embarkation to America, where hostilities were most active. In September, 1814, the New Barracks at Chelmsford were cleared of troops preparatory to being sold and demolished, and the same order was issued in respect of Danbury and Maldon. The German troops were also leaving the country, though too slowly for some of the critics, and parties of the King's German Legion, a celebrated Peninsular corps, embarked at Harwich for Ostend. An address of congratulation passed by a county meeting was presented by the Secretary of State (Lord Sidmouth) to the Prince Regent, who was reported, in reply, to have referred in high terms to the loyal and public spirit of Essex. The preparations for return to peaceful pursuits were accompanied, as at all other such times, by much political unrest. The freeholders and inhabitants of Barstable and Chafford, with Sir Thomas Barrett-Lennard in the chair, in December, 1814, petitioned the House of Commons against the renewal of the Property Tax and also, in the interest of agriculture, urged necessity for further legislative protection. This demand was supported by a county meeting on January 31st, 1815, when the resolution was carried with only three dissentients, the tax being deemed to be "most unjust and unequal in its operation." The petition was presented by Messrs. Western and Houblon and in March Mr. Western was sponsor of a request for a revision of the Corn Laws.

Then in the midst of contention came the news that Napoleon had landed in France, but the files of the Press of that day do not indicate any serious feeling of alarm in Essex. Neither, in fact, was it shown in private correspondence. Colonel Archer Houblon, one of the members for Essex, writing to the Clerk of the Peace, from the House of Commons, on March 10th, 1815, was much more concerned over the presentation of Sir Francis Burdett's petition for Parliamentary reform and the possibility that Lord Cochrane, who had escaped from Newgate, should make an appearance at the House. His reference to the great event

Digitized by Google

in France was most laconic: "Bonaparte has landed in the South of France, between Frejus and Antebes"—that, and nothing more. Indeed, it would seem that Napoleon's effort was not expected to achieve substantial results and even when news came of the great Frenchman's defeat at Waterloo there was no general rejoicing. There was considerable military activity in the county, however. Towards the end of March *The Essex Chronicle* remarked, "Our town again begins to assume the appearance of war." Troops were passing through almost daily for Flanders, including detachments of the 5th Dragoon Guards, 35th, 37th and 52nd Regiments. A large train of artillery proceeded by forced march from Colchester to Tilbury Fort, there to embark in ships despatched from Woolwich. The 10th Hussars left Romford and sailed from Purfleet. Large quantities of ordnance stores were transported from Chelmsford, whilst recruiting was also active, the officer in charge at Chelmsford reporting that over 200 young men had enlisted. In June the demand for musket ball cartridge was so great that a Chelmsford contractor's stage wagons were hired for taking 1,500,000 rounds from the Chelmsford depot to Purfleet, there to be shipped to the Continent. Then late in June came the news of the victory and notification that the hospitals at Colchester and Chelmsford were to be prepared for the reception of the wounded. In July eight transports arrived off the former town with 400 men, who were landed at the Hythe. "Many of them had lost an arm or hand or had received sabre wounds from the charges of the French cavalry. Though for the most part exhibiting a deplorable appearance, but a small proportion of their number were incapable from the nature of their wounds or reduction of strength of walking from the place of debarkation to the quarters prepared for their reception." Subscriptions were raised all over the county for the Patriotic Fund to help the dependants of the slain and wounded, the most notable contribution being that of Colchester, with £412. Then in January, 1816, there marched into Colchester from France the 2nd battalions of the 73rd and 33rd and the 92nd (Gordon) Highlanders, being received with acclamation and bell-ringing. The 42nd (Black Watch) also came into garrison at Chelmsford and it is worthy of recall that these two famous Highland regiments were brigaded with the 44th (1st Bn. The Essex Regiment) for the Waterloo Campaign. The 44th were in line with the 42nd at Quatre Bras and subsequently, owing to losses from repeated cavalry charges, the two regiments formed one square. Then, again, at Waterloo, the 44th were in Pack's brigade with the Black Watch and Gordons when it worsted the attack of Marcognet's column and opened out for the Union Brigade to ride through and, with the Household Brigade, sweep the enemy from that part of the field. The nation turned its face resolutely to peace and the grave political problems which ensued. Perhaps the best

Digitized by Google

commentary upon this new attitude of mind, after twenty years of almost continuous warfare, was the announcement in September, 1815, that the extensive system of defence around Chelmsford was being dismantled and that the guns, long 24 pounders and howitzers of heavy calibre, were being removed to the wharf for transit to Woolwich.

FEAR OF INVASION.

The fear of invasion of Essex was real—both with the naval and military authorities and the civil population. There were two periods when apprehension developed into grave anxiety—in 1798, when Napoleon returned from Egypt and concentrated his Army of England in and about Boulogne, and at the renewal of the war from 1803 onwards until the Battle of Trafalgar in 1805, after which there was a very considerable diminution of concern. In the autumn of 1803 an attack was daily expected and to calm the people notification was made that according to reports of reconnoitrers and spies a landing was not likely to be attempted for three weeks! At this period there was some movement of nervous people from the county, for Farington, in his Diary, under date October, 1803, wrote that the artist Halls called, who stated that his mother and sisters had come to live in London from Colchester, as General Sir J. Craggs (?Craig) had advised his father to remove them and also any documents of value. The General was stated to be of opinion that if the French were to succeed in their first attack they might in a few hours be in possession of Colchester, which was only ten miles from the sea. In January, 1804, Mrs. Jane Taylor, authoress of "Twinkle, twinkle, little star," wrote to her mother at Lavenham, Suffolk, at length upon the public concern in this matter, adding "Though at Colchester there are many unbelievers and laughers, there are many, too, who still entertain strong fears." By 1813 apprehension had apparently almost completely passed away, for the palisades and timbers forming part of the defences of Chelmsford were pulled down and sold by auction.

Upon the outbreak of war with a Continental power the possibility of invasion must always be uppermost in the minds of those responsible for the safety of the realm. As far back as 1545 the Duke of Norfolk was instructed to inspect the Essex shore to Shoeburyness to gauge the risk of an enemy landing and he came to the conclusion there was no great danger, because the country was very strong in hedges and ditches, quaintly adding, "I think the most hurt they can do is to burn a town of mine called Prittlewell and another small town called Lee." There were anxious fears of an invasion in 1744 also. In that year the French contemplated aggressive action against England in favour of the Stuarts. They collected a force of 15,000 men at Dunkirk and secured the co-operation of Prince Charles Edward, the eldest son of the Old Pretender.

Digitized by Google

England only had eight thousand effectives at her disposal and the Channel was not effectively guarded. A landing was daily expected in Essex and Sussex, which Horace Walpole, among others, thought would be supported by a general rising. This danger passed peacefully, however. Brig.-General Moore (later the hero of Corunna) surveyed the East Coast as far as Norfolk and reported in 1798 to Sir William Howe, commanding the Eastern District, that the most vulnerable part of the coast was from the Thames to Harwich. The Marquis Cornwallis, another well-known general, deemed Essex "a most difficult county to defend with inexperienced troops, unaccustomed to move against a most active enemy, who have derived confidence from their extraordinary success against the most powerful and warlike countries of Europe." General Dumouriez, the celebrated French refugee, reported upon the defence of Essex in 1803: "The compilers of the 1796 plan dismiss the coasts of Essex and Suffolk as practically out of the question for a flotilla of small vessels, owing to the length of the voyage, the difficulties of the navigation and the commanding positions held by the British Fleet at the Nore and Yarmouth. This assumption seems far too sanguine, considering that the French have the great naval resources of the Netherlands at their disposal and that the interior of Essex offers many facilities to an invader." Dumouriez's general observations were that every beach, even though practicable, was not suitable for a descent. There must be a headland which either flanked the landing place on the right or the left, or which could be hugged on both sides by the flotilla if the latter was too numerous to spread out on a single strand between two capes. Rivers were even more dangerous landing places than open beaches, because, firstly, the defence was better prepared beforehand and the means of resistance more numerous; secondly, the banks were more contrasted and afforded less room for a flotilla to effect a landing and exposed it to heavier gunfire and hence more losses and disorder; thirdly, the flotilla could then be easily blocked in, attacked and burnt, the same wind which had borne it into the river's mouth not only aiding the entrance of the enemy, but preventing its non-exit and reducing the range of its own fire. In Dumouriez's opinion, the most dangerous rivers to attack were the Thames, Blackwater, Stour, Wash, Humber, Severn and Dee. Amongst the cardinal points of national defence or as pivots of communication — "and, as such, must never be allowed to fall into the enemy's hands"—he placed the Isle of Sheppey and Landguard Point, opposite Harwich. Little attention was paid to this General's scheme, upon which Fortescue has made the biting comment; "The military authorities, not unreasonably feeling some distrust of the man, declined to permit him to make a close military survey of any ground, and since he was, therefore, compelled to rely

Digitized by Google

wholly upon inaccurate maps for his premises, his conclusions must necessarily have been of doubtful value. Furthermore, amid much that is probably sound in Dumouriez's plans, there is such a wealth of what can only be described as nonsense." The barrack accommodation in Essex was reported in 1803 to be sufficient for 1,200 cavalry and 17,000 infantry (Colchester 700 cavalry and 6,000 infantry; Chelmsford 80 cavalry and 300 infantry), whilst in 1804 the G.O.C. Eastern District (Lieut.-General Sir James Craig) estimated that 21,350 men and 1,160 horses could be billeted in Colchester alone. The defence of Harwich and Colchester was the constant preoccupation of the military authorities. This was suggested by the disposition of troops, which at one time comprised an infantry brigade at Bradfield, near Mistley, another at Weeley to repel a possible landing at Frinton and Walton-on-the-Naze, a third brigade at Colchester, with the Brigade of Guards at Chelmsford and a cavalry regiment at Romford, having a squadron at Billericay. A memorandum, presumably written after the resumption of the war, gave (1) the probable places of enemy landing in Essex; (2) the points of assembly for troops and (3) the advanced posts which were to be occupied, as follows :—

1	2	3
Clacton	Manningtree and Colchester	E. Donyland, Weeley and Ramsay St.
Mersea Island	Colchester and Witham	Gt. Wigborough and Maldon.
S. of Blackwater	Chelmsford and Danbury	Maldon and Purleigh Heights.
From the Crouch	Chelmsford	Hullbridge.
Leigh	Billericay	Hadleigh.

The defence of Essex shores was entrusted during one period to the victor of Trafalgar, for in 1801 Nelson was appointed to the command of a "Squadron on Particular Service," whose chief duty was the protection of the Thames Estuary and South Eastern Coast. For this purpose the great Admiral drew up a scheme of defence, the chief proposal in which was the creation of three flotillas of gunboats and flat boats, one near Margate and Ramsgate, the second between Orfordness and North Foreland, and the third in Hollesley Bay, whilst floating batteries were to be stationed at all the different channels of the Thames to act as supports to the lighter vessels. The Peace of Amiens put an end to Nelson's labours in this connection, but his general conclusion in respect of the possibility of invasion is worth recall, as he was intimately acquainted with the Essex shore when attached, as a midshipman, to the "Triumph" at Chatham; "Besides the stationed ships at the different ports between North Foreland and Orfordness, as many gun vessels as can be spared from the very necessary protection of the coast of Sussex and of

Digitized by Google

Kent to the westward of Dover should be collected, for this part of the coast must be seriously attended to. Supposing London the object of surprise, I am of opinion that the enemy's object ought to be the getting on shore as speedily as possible, for the dangers of a navigation of forty-eight hours appear to me to be an insurmountable objection to the rowing from Boulogne to the coast of Essex. It is, therefore, most probable (for it is certainly proper to believe the French are coming to attack London, and, therefore, to be prepared) that from Boulogne, Calais and even Havre, the enemy will try and land in Sussex, or the lower part of Kent, and from Dunkirk, Ostend and other ports of Flanders land on the coast of Essex and Suffolk, for I own myself of opinion the object being to get on shore somewhere within 100 miles of London as speedily as possible, that the flats in the mouth of the Thames will not be the only place necessary to attend to." A passive defence did not suit Nelson's temperament and it is not surprising that his final conclusion was, " Our first defence is close to the enemy's ports."

FALSE ALARMS.

In November, 1796, report spread that there had been a landing on the East Coast. Sections of light artillery and strong bodies of cavalry were immediately sent to the exposed parts of Essex. The Pembroke Fencible Cavalry marched to Bradwell and Burnham and a chain of infantry posts was established from Mersea Island to Harwich. Again in February, 1797, there was much alarm over a possible descent upon Essex by troops concentrated at Dunkirk and Flushing, and preparations were actually made for the removal of cattle and stock from the coast. Danger was not to come from that quarter, however, for in the middle of that year there flamed out the mutiny in the Navy, as a result of which the fleet at the Nore barred the Thames and the Government retorted by closing access to the land, for every road or lane leading from the north bank of the river as far as Tilbury was patrolled by troops, by which means a great number of mutineers were taken into custody. At Tilbury two delegates were detected in an attempt at escape, and one of them blew out his brains after asking his companion to do the same. This he declined to do, preferring, he said, to live as long as he could ; he was arrested and sent to gaol. The troops at Southend consisted of the 23rd Regiment of Foot, under the command of Colonel Ellis, and the East Norfolk Militia, under Sir John Wodehouse, occupying a line of posts from Leigh to Foulness Island. Whilst on this duty they apprehended a party of armed sailors and escorted them to Chelmsford Gaol. Wild rumours flew about the county respecting the situation at Southend, one report stating that the place had been burnt down. No depredation, however, was committed by the mutineers. When, in October of the same year, the welcome news came that

Digitized by Google

the fleet which had been in mutiny had won the great victory over the Dutch, known to history as the Battle of Camperdown, Southend greeted the news with utmost enthusiasm. The celebration included a bonfire, illumination and fireworks. Later in the evening a number of the inhabitants dined at the Spread Eagle Inn, Prittlewell, and fifty gallons of ale were given to the populace. A song, composed by a clergyman, was rendered in honour of the occasion, one verse of which ran :

" The guardians of England's impregnable shore
" Have gallantly fought and conquered once more ;
" Their valour effaces foul mutiny's stain,
" And their loyalty shines in full splendour again."

There were similar rejoicings in other parts of the county, and, as was customary in those times, regiments stationed in Essex contributed a day's pay for the benefit of the widows and orphans of those who fell in the battle.

There were several false alarms of invasion, for it has to be remembered that in addition to official intelligence, the countryside was filled with wild stories of preparations on the Continent circulated by privateersmen and smugglers. An urgent request was made to farmers and others not to burn their refuse so as to cause confusion with the system of signalling devised to give warning in case of invasion. This instruction was not always obeyed, as the following incident will show. In November, 1803, at 10 o'clock at night, the inhabitants of Chelmsford were surprised at the arrival of a messenger in great haste, bearing a despatch from General Beckwith, at Danbury, to Major-General Finch, commanding the Chelmsford garrison, that a light was burning to the southward and was supposed to arise from the firing of a beacon on the coast. Officers of the Danbury garrison staying in Chelmsford were immediately ordered to rejoin their regiments. The troops were put under arms and ball cartridge served out, whilst preparations were made to convey the alarm to all parts of the coast and to the interior by firing the beacon at Danbury. Then when all was ready it was discovered that the ferment had been produced by a person burning a quantity of weeds and bean straw. In January, 1804, came another alarm, this time from Southend. A signal was made three times in the course of the day from East Cliff that the enemy had appeared in the south-eastern quarter. The Sea Fencibles, under Captain Beaver, made ready to embark and several volunteer corps in the neighbourhood prepared to turn out. A patrol of the Wakering Yeomanry (Captain Jonas Asplin) doing coast duty was reinforced and every arrangement made for communicating definite news through the country.

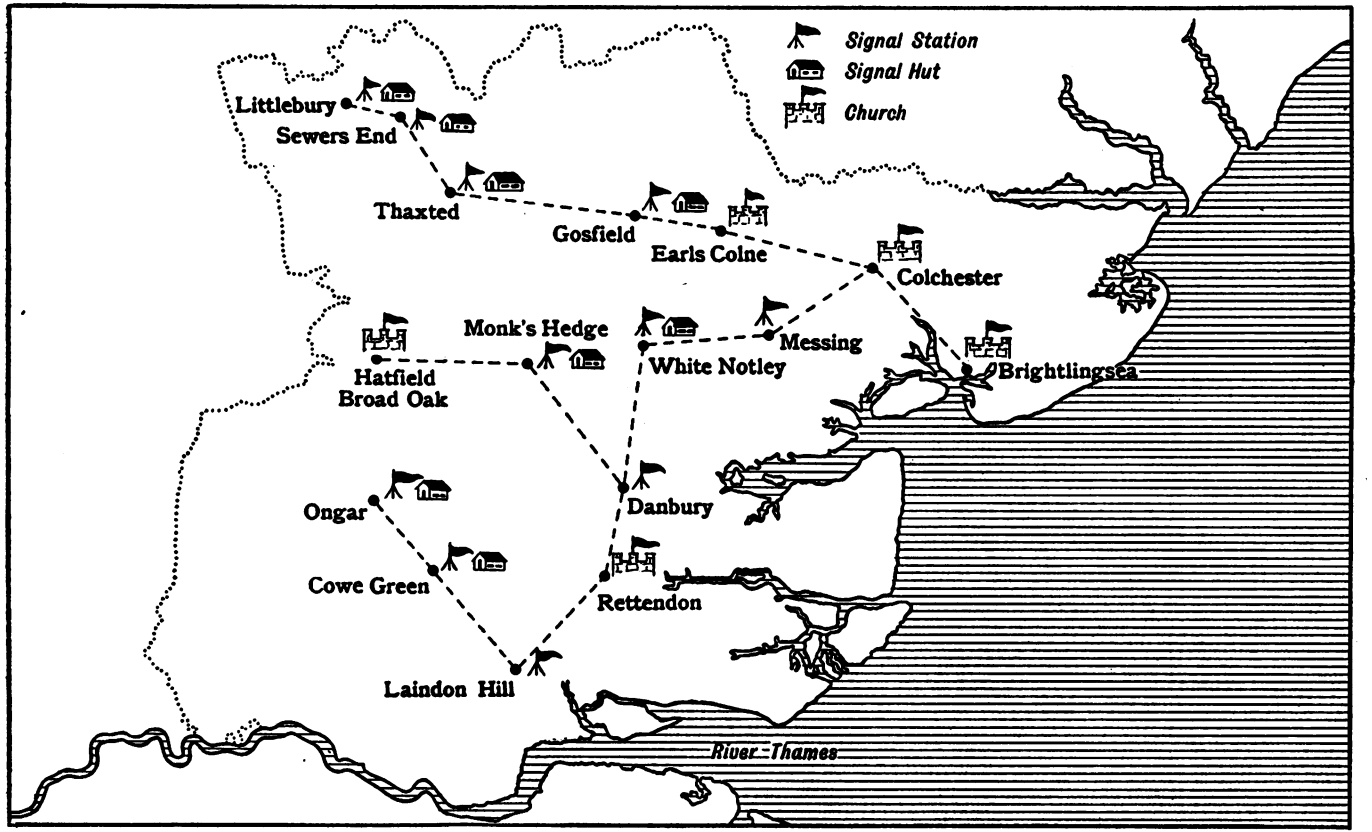
SYSTEM OF WARNING.

The system of signals to be employed in case of invasion was

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



System of Primary Signalling Stations devised to give warning of Enemy Landing during the Napoleonic War.
Drawn by H. H. Burrows from the Original Sketch

Digitized by Google

elaborated with the greatest care. At a meeting of the County Lieutenancy in August, 1803, the clergy and churchwardens were requested not to hoist flags on the church towers except as a means of spreading intelligence in case of invasion, and in the same year it was ordered that no bonfires should be lit on November 5th. Beacons were also constructed along the coast for use in daytime, their distinguishing characteristic being that they emitted a column of smoke rather than a blaze. Beacons made of straw, faggots and tar barrels were to be lighted in case of need at night and this chain of signals ran through Essex, Suffolk and Norfolk. There was an efficiency test on November 14th, 1803, when, by order of the County Lieutenancy, the beacons were lighted for half an hour after midnight upon the high land at Colchester, Wigborough, Danbury, Langdon Hills, Cowe Green, Ongar Park, Good Easter, Wethersfield and Littlebury Broom. A system of primary signal stations was established, under military direction, comprising 16 points, viz., Brightlingsea, Colchester, Earls Colne, Messing, White Notley, Danbury, Munn's Hedge, Rettendon, Langdon Hill, Cowe Green, Gosfield, Thaxted, Littlebury, Sewers End, Hatfield Broad Oak and Ongar Park. At this time, too, a white flag was kept flying at each station in the day-time to mark it clearly to the sentinels at communicating points. The hoisting of a red flag was the signal for general alarm and was to be taken as a sufficient authority to light the beacons and to hoist other red flags provided for the purpose in the various towns and villages. The system for the hours of darkness was perfected still further in September of the same year, when each signal station was furnished with a stack of furze to be lit on the appearance of the enemy, communication between them to be maintained by means of rockets and coloured lights. A cordon of frigates was also established round the coast to give warning. It was not long after Trafalgar, however, that the cost of the watch and maintenance of the Essex beacons was considered a useless expense. In September, 1806, the Earl of Chatham, who had become Commander-in-Chief of the Eastern District at Colchester, made representations to the Lord Lieutenant, as a consequence of which Lord Braybrooke wrote to the lieutenants of sub-divisions requesting that they should adopt measures for the abolition of the beacon stations and the disposal of the materials. Steps were immediately taken to give effect to this instruction, but the system died hard, for in May, 1808, Lieut.-Colonel T. Birch, A.Q.M.G., Colchester, wrote to the Lord Lieutenant, stating that it was expedient to take measures "for security of the military signal stations which have been lately put in repair throughout the County of Essex." Instead of employing soldiers as guards—"unless the circumstances of immediate alarm should make a more constant attendance on them advisable"—it was suggested that superintendents should be appointed

Digitized by Google

to see that the places were kept in good order at a remuneration of three shillings per week. Some time later his Lordship wrote to the Clerk of the Lieutenancy stating that he had heard indirectly of the possibility of the beacons being renewed. Feeling that the signal houses and beacons were an inconvenience and expense, he had hoped the plan was wholly abandoned. He had made what was in fact the largest beacon (Audley End) and watched in the neighbourhood the corresponding signal at Sewers End. Notwithstanding the great flame and smoke, their beacon was not seen by their neighbours and neither could they distinguish the other. He added: "The signal houses are now all evacuated by order, I believe, of the Commander-in-Chief and I own I heard of the order with pleasure, as, independently of the failure of the beacons, the soldiers who watched (or, rather, who were ordered to watch, at signal houses) behaved disorderly, ran into debt in the neighbouring villages and never were seen in their duty, but were heard of as poachers." In August, 1811, the practice of paying superintendents was stopped and the whole system abandoned. The buildings were permitted to remain in case they were wanted, but only at the good will of the owners of the land upon which they stood.

It is curious to note that despite alarms of invasion Southend developed at this period into a fashionable bathing place and was constantly resorted to by officers of units stationed in the county. In September, 1795, there was a dance there, attended by the Marquis of Salisbury, then commanding the Hertfordshire Militia, and Lord and Lady Clive, the band of the Shropshire Regiment being present by permission of Lord Clive. Next year the Marquis Cornwallis, with staff, visited the Caroline Baths at Southend, then newly established. The notorious Princess Caroline of Wales and her suite arrived at Southend in May, 1804, and was received with great ceremony. Her Royal Highness was met at Rayleigh by a detachment of the Wakering Yeomanry and escorted to the Terrace, where the Prittlewell Volunteers were present to do her honour. Then, within a month or two of Trafalgar, Lady Emma Hamilton, who was staying on the Terrace at Southend, gave a dinner and ball to which all the naval officers of the Nore Command were invited and the health heartily drunk of the hero of the Nile.

THE COUNTY SYSTEM OF ADMINISTRATION.

The strain upon the county organization throughout the period of the war was very considerable. The Lord Lieutenant was responsible for the execution of all matters relating to the embodiment, officering and recruiting of the regular Militia battalions; he was charged with a similar duty in respect of the Local Militia battalions upon their formation in 1809. All applications for recognition of units and recommendations for

Digitized by Google

commissioned officers of the volunteer cavalry and infantry units, some scores in number, passed through his hands, and, in addition, he was responsible for the administration of schemes for warning the county in case of invasion and removing the people and stock to places of safety. The constant volunteering of men from the Militia into the regular regiments threw upon him the responsibility of filling the vacancies. The requirement for each battalion was a fixed number of privates, and consequently when promotions were made in the battalion, fresh vacancies occurred which had to be filled. When commanding officers of the Militia notified the men who had volunteered into line regiments or of their promotion, the parish of each man was given and if he was a substitute the name of the man in whose stead he served was also supplied. By this means the contribution to the Militia of each particular parish in men was checked and the number maintained. The Lord Lieutenant acted through his Lieutenancy, who met frequently during the year, and issued instructions through their Clerk, who then transmitted them to the clerks of the sub-divisions, who made arrangements for the taking of the ballot, if necessary, prepared and revised the lists of men liable to serve and issued the necessary orders to the chief constables of the hundreds for the posting of notices upon church doors and public places and the delivery of forms and orders. Lord Braybrooke was constantly urged to speedy execution of instructions by the Minister for War; he, likewise, urged expedition on the part of his Lieutenancy. The labour must have been enormous and the difficulty of communication keenly felt. As early as 1778 the notices for the embodiment of the Militia were issued as printed forms, but all correspondence was laboriously copied by hand and there is evidence that the Lord Lieutenant, having only one copy, once transcribed in his own hand the whole of a long proclamation which he had received in order that he might forward it to the Clerk of the Lieutenancy. The time taken in getting the machinery of administration into motion must have been long and vexatious. When he received instructions, the Lord Lieutenant had first to communicate with the Clerk; he, in turn, arranged for a meeting of the Lieutenancy, and they, in their turn, communicated with the sub-divisions, so that several weeks went by before the requisite instructions were issued and if questions of interpretation arose months elapsed before the issue was finally decided. The embodiment of the Essex Militia Battalions on March 19th, 1803, involved the signing of 41 orders by the Lord Lieutenant and the delivery of thousands of forms to the clerks of the twelve sub-divisions by the Clerk of the Peace, by coach or post chaise, including 484 precepts, which had to be filled in by the chief constables of Hundreds, and 2,944 notices, which had to be signed and delivered by the petty constables, who, in addition, had to post the precepts on the church doors.

Digitized by Google

SYSTEM ORGANIZED FOR REMOVAL OF PEOPLE AND STOCK.

As early as November, 1796, when considering the enforcement of the Act establishing the Provisional Cavalry, the County Lieutenancy were also concerned with a proposal to remove the inhabitants and live stock from the coast in case of invasion. They then reported to the Secretary of State that the farmers and others were so zealously disposed to remove their live and dead stock and throw every possible impediment in the way of the enemy that it was not deemed necessary to take an inventory, as had been done in Dorsetshire and other counties. The Lord Lieutenant and the County Lieutenancy were also most actively concerned with the preparations to meet invasion in 1798. Lord Braybrooke, who had recently succeeded Lord Howard de Walden as Lord Lieutenant, summoned meetings of the Lieutenancy in the early part of the year to take into consideration what were termed "certain precautionary measures" for the defence of the coast. A committee was appointed, which conferred with the general officers of the Eastern District and also with the Commissary-General. The last-named official prepared several plans "for the internal defence of the said district and the country at large and the better supply of his Majesty's troops in case of invasion." Early in March the Lieutenancy deemed it advisable to issue a notice intimating that great caution should be used along the sea coast in letting boats or vessels to persons under any circumstances of suspicion, or who were not well-known to the owners, and of allowing them to land upon another part of the coast. The county was divided into sub-divisions for the purpose of facilitating the removal of inhabitants and stock from the districts which might be invaded and returns were prepared of the number of wagons, carts, horses, drivers and conductors, such returns from each parish being presented by the churchwardens or overseers of the poor. The movement received great impetus by the passage through Parliament, in April, 1798, of a Bill for the Defence of the Country, the first clause of which revealed an intention of taking most comprehensive measures, including a list of all able-bodied men, the only exceptions being clergymen of the Church of England, licensed preachers of dissenting congregations, great officers of State, Judges and persons actually serving in the Army, Navy or Militia. This roll was to state if the men were incapable of service what the infirmity was and, if exempted, the ground for such exemption; also whether they were serving or willing to serve in a volunteer corps or as drivers of carriages, horses or cattle, or as pioneers or labourers. Returns were also to be prepared of inhabitants who were incapable of removing themselves and of all wagons, carts, horses, cattle, sheep, hay, straw, corn, meal, flour and other provisions, all mills and ovens, and "all other matters and things which may be useful to the

Digitized by Google

enemy or for the public service." The return in respect of the vehicles, horses and cattle was to show whether the owners were willing to lend them to the public service, either gratuitously or for hire, with the number of drivers available, so as to clear the country. The second clause gave power to the Lord Lieutenant to appoint persons to train and exercise those who were willing to take arms and those who would execute the other necessary duties. Lord Braybrooke summoned a meeting of the Lieutenancy at the Shire Hall, Chelmsford, on April 16th, when a plan was discussed for removing live stock in case of invasion, for saving as much other property as possible and for rendering the general body of the people instrumental in defence. It was explained that should the enemy land, the intention was to deprive him immediately of all means of subsistence. The Navy would seek to cut off his communication with the sea and the Army would confine him on shore in such a way as to make it impossible for him to draw supplies from the adjacent country. In this situation it was expected he would be forced to lay down his arms or to give battle under such disadvantageous terms as could leave no doubt of his being defeated. If circumstances, however, enabled the enemy to make some progress, a steady perseverance in the system of defence thus outlined would increase the difficulties at every step and, sooner or later, " he must inevitably pay forfeit of his temerity." The aid which would be given this plan by driving the live stock from the affected districts and in the case of absolute necessity destroying other means of subsistence was held to be too self-evident to need discussion—the only question was how far the plan could be carried out with the greatest celerity and order and with the least possible injury to individuals. It was made clear that persons whose stock was removed would be indemnified their loss, also for whatever movable property was destroyed by our own arms, provided that the owners had entered into arrangements to assist in the manner indicated. To give emphasis to this point, it was added: " At the same time it must be clearly understood that no indemnification whatever can be allowed for any property destroyed either by our own arms or by the enemy if it should appear that no previous preparation or exertion had been made use of to remove it, and that all property left in this state is to be destroyed, if necessary, to prevent its falling into the enemy's hands." The Lieutenancy agreed unanimously that all possible measures should be taken and sub-divisional meetings were ordered to be held, at which the chief constables and the chief officers of separate jurisdictions within such sub-divisions were to be present. The necessary steps were taken with enthusiasm and energy. Volunteer and Yeomanry Corps, as will be seen in another chapter, sprang into being in all parts of the county, whilst every preparation was made, by the grouping of pioneers and drivers into companies, under the

Digitized by Google

guidance of inspectors of hundreds, to ensure the removal of the inhabitants and of the stock. Details were so perfected that instructions were issued to the bakers as to the type of loaf which was to be made in case of invasion. In baking loaves of 3½lb. in weight particular care was to be taken that they should be covered all round by a hard crust, as otherwise they would not keep in hot weather; loaves of this weight were for the same reason preferable to those of larger size, because the latter, if kept and carried upon wagons, were much more liable to spoil. This question of food supply was naturally of great importance to the military authorities and in July, 1797, the Commissary-General of the Eastern District reported to the Quartermaster-General that depots for flour and oats were being created; that the local bakeries could provide at least four times the quantity of bread for all the inhabitants and troops then in garrison; that there were portable ovens for 3,500 men and that arrangements were being made for the supply of an army of 120,000 men.

A voluntary contribution to the cost of the war was also inaugurated and widely supported in Essex. West Mersea, for instance, sent a sum of £66 15s., which included nearly sixty shilling subscriptions from workmen and others, as well as £5 5s. from a benefit society which met at the "White Hart."

There was a recurrence of alarm at invasion in 1801 and the following instructions issued by the Lord Lieutenant to the commanders of troops of Yeomanry Cavalry give an excellent idea of the scheme which was prepared for meeting the emergency:

"Having met the Generals of the Eastern District on the 11th July, in consequence of a letter from Lord Hobart requesting us to take into consideration 'A plan proposed for removing the live stock, etc., from the coast of Great Britain and for rendering the body of the people instrumental in the defence of the country at this crisis,' it has given me much satisfaction to think that the plans adopted by this county in 1798 (and which still remain in full force) render it unnecessary at this juncture to have recourse to new expedients for the same purpose; at the same time, it appears very essential to the public good that the counties particularly exposed to invasion shall be thrown into divisions, and if the number of troops of Yeomanry in the part of the country to be cleared admit of it, that no division should exceed eight or ten parishes.

"Upon this ground, knowing as I well do the zeal and activity of the several troops of Yeomanry now embodied, and coinciding in opinion with the Secretary of State and with the General commanding the district that these corps of all others are the most eligible to be employed in protecting that property which is so desirable to be withheld from invaders, I beg leave to send you a list of the divisions or districts settled by General Balfour, to which it may be necessary on an invasion, or immediate danger thereof, to allot corps of Yeomanry Cavalry for the purpose of

Digitized by Google

superintending the removal of the live stock from the coast within the boundary of the particular district or division.

"If it should be necessary to call on your corps for the above service you shall have the earliest information of the particular district to which your services may be most beneficially directed.

"I am also desired by the Generals to recommend to the captains or officers commanding Yeomanry corps to fix with all possible expedition an alarm post or general place of rendezvous at which the troops would assemble upon being directed in case of alarm. But should their commanding officer require their assembling on any particular point he will specify the spot in writing.

"It is also recommended to the commanding officers of troops to arrange and fix upon the most expeditious mode of collecting the men of their troops and at the shortest notice."

The particulars enclosed gave directions for driving cattle from the coast of Essex "should the appearance of the enemy render it necessary" and their reproduction over 120 years later will probably not be without their interest, particularly bearing in mind similar directions given in the early stages of the war of 1914-1919.

TENDRING HUNDRED—To be divided into two districts (or divisions) and the stock to be driven to Sudbury in the following manner: 1st Division will include from Dedham along the Stour to Harwich, from thence along the coast to Frinton, from Frinton it will have for its boundary the road leading to Thorp, Tendring Hundred Heath, Horseley Cross to Little Bromley and to the 56 mile stone (near Ardleigh) and clear Dedham Heath. The cattle must be driven across the Harwich Road by the several roads between the 56 mile stone and the Stour and the Ipswich Road, from Park Lane to the Dedham Gun, to proceed by Langham through Neyland to Sudbury. The road from Frinton to Thorp is not to be driven upon, but having advanced to Thorp Green the road to Tendring, etc., may be used. The great roads leading from Colchester to Ipswich and Harwich are not to be driven upon except in the several crossings, which must be executed as expeditiously as possible. 2nd Division will include Frinton and will be bound on the north side by the road leading from Frinton to Thorp, Tendring Hundred Heath, Horseley Cross, Little Bromley, the road by Cats Green to Ardleigh, and by the side of Dedham Heath; from Frinton it will extend along the coast to St. Osith Point, St. Osith's Stone and continue up the Colne River to the Hithe Bridge. The cattle will cross the Harwich Road at Ardleigh and the 53 mile stone to Boxted Heath and proceed by Bures to Sudbury. The roads leading from Colchester through Emsted Market to Thorp and Frinton and from Weeley Cross to the Clacktons and Great and Little Hollands must not be driven along. When it is necessary to cross these roads, as well as the Ipswich and Harwich roads, they must be cleared as soon as possible. This Division may make a short halt upon Boxted Heath.

Digitized by Google

LEXDEN HUNDRED—Will drive to Halsted and the Hedinghams. The cattle in the part of this Hundred south of the London Road from Colchester, by the Colne, up the Roman River, will cross the road between Mark's Tey and Lexden with all possible haste and proceed by the Wakes Colne to Halsted and the Hedinghams. That part of this Hundred north of London Road which it may be judged necessary to clear will follow the same route, not to make any halt before it reaches Ford Street.

WINSTREE AND THURSTABLE HUNDREDS—Will be divided as follows and the stock driven to Halsted and the Hedinghams. 1st Division, Mersey Island. The stock must be driven by Pelden to Layer Heath across the Roman River and proceed to Lexden, cross the London Road as expeditiously as possible and pursue the route to Halsted, etc., not to halt until the London Road is one mile in the rear. 2nd Division.—The boundaries of this Division will be the Colne River on the East, Mersey Channel and the Creek to Salcote on the North, the road from Salcote by Packwood to Ridgeways and to Podswood on the West and the Roman River to the South. The road from Colchester to Mersey Island over Mamwood Bridge must not be driven upon except when it is necessary to cross it; Mamwood Bridge upon no account to be crossed by the stock. Unless it is perfectly understood that there are not any troops ordered from Colchester to Fingringhoe, the bridge near that place must not be made use of, but all the cattle driven across the river at Bouncer's Bridge, and to the west of it, these proceed by Maypole Green on the right and Heckford Bridge on the left, cross the London Road with all expedition at Mark's Tey, Stanway and Beacon Farm and proceed to Halsted, etc. Not to halt before the London Road is quite clear of the stock. 3rd Division will extend from Podswood by the road from Ridgeways to Salcote and along the Creek to the Blackwater and by the side of that river to Heybridge and Wickhams Mills. The stock of this Division will cross the London Road between Witham and Gore Pitt and proceed by the bye-roads and cross the Coggeshall roads between that place and Braintree and continue to Halsted and the Hedinghams. This Division must be expeditious in crossing the London and Coggeshall roads. It may make a short halt, if necessary, between the two roads.

DENGEY HUNDRED—Will form one district between the Black Water and Crouch Rivers. The stock of this district will cross the London Road from Witham to Springfield and be driven to Dunmow and Bishop's Stortford. The principal road from Chelmsford to Malden and from Malden to Ramsey Island, Bradwell and Fambridge Ferry must be kept clear, except in the necessary crossings, which must be done as quick as possible. Not to halt till it has crossed the London road.

ROCHFORD HUNDRED.—Between the Crouch (including Wallasea, Foulness and the other Islands) and Hadley Ray. The stock of this Hundred will cross the London road between

Digitized by Google

Mountnessing Street and Margaretting Street and proceed to Ongar and Bishop's Stortford. The principal roads leading from the Thames to the London Road, particularly the one through Billericay, must not be driven upon except in the necessary crossings, which must be done as quick as possible.

METHOD OF RESISTING THE INVADER.

The recurrence of the war in 1803 again caused great activity. On June 24th a meeting of the Lieutenancy was held at Chelmsford, Lord Braybrooke in the chair, at which there was also present Lieut.-General Sir James Craig, commanding the Eastern District. Loyal resolutions were unanimously passed and measures taken to render the general body of the people available for defence, as in previous years, in case of invasion. The county was divided into seven divisions upon the recommendation of Sir James Craig, each in charge of a deputy lieutenant, termed a Lieutenant of Division, as follows :

1. Tendring Hundred and Harwich—Mr. John Hanson.
2. Hundreds of Witham, Thurstable, Lexden, Winstree and Colchester—Rev. N. Corsellis.
3. Dengie Hundred and Maldon—Mr. J. W. Hull.
4. Hundreds of Rochford, Barstable and Chafford—Mr. Daniel Scratton.
5. Hundreds of Hinckford, Freshwell, Dunmow, Clavering, Uttlesford, with Saffron Walden—Lieut.-General B. T. Henniker.
6. Hundreds of Ongar and Harlow and Liberty of Havering—Mr. Charles Smith.
7. Hundreds of Becontree and Waltham—Mr. Wm. Manbey.

The Inspectors for Hundreds and Boroughs were : Tendring, Mr. Thomas Nunn ; Harwich, Mr. John Hopkins ; Witham, Mr. T. Kynaston ; Thurstable and half Lexden Hundred, Mr. T. T. Cock ; Winstree, half Lexden and Colchester, Mr. J. Bawtree ; Dengie, Rev. H. B. Dudley ; Rochford, Rev. J. Wise ; Barstable, Mr. J. J. Salter ; Chafford, Mr. Wm. Russell ; Hinckford, Mr. L. Majendie ; Freshwell, Rev. John Raymond ; Dunmow, Mr. Michael Pepper ; Clavering, Mr. George Pochin ; Uttlesford, Mr. Barley Heath ; Saffron Walden, Mr. Martin Catlin ; Harlow, Mr. John Perry ; Ongar, Mr. Wm. Dyer ; Havering, Mr. J. M. Grafton ; Becontree, Mr. John Popplewell ; Waltham, Mr. Wm. Palmer.

The parish officers were enjoined to make the necessary returns to the military. In July came the instructions of the Duke of York, as Commander-in-Chief, respecting the removal of stock, setting out the districts which it would be advisable to clear, and the routes by which it was to be moved and the depot to which it was to be sent. A corps of guides was to be formed—three to six in each parish or district—and in the event of invasion these men were required to report at the headquarters of the army within the military district or county. A corps of

Digitized by Google

pioneers, each company to be of a strength of from 25 to 75, was to open communications for the march of the army, closing such roads as might be of use to the enemy, fortifying posts and camps as required. The general instruction was: "From the first moment of landing the great object of irregular troops must be to harass, alarm and fatigue the enemy. Nothing can more effectively contribute to this object than the operations of small bodies of men well acquainted with the country, who will approach and fire upon the advanced posts of his army without ever engaging in serious action or hazarding themselves in any situation where their own natural intelligence and watchfulness does not ensure them from the danger of being cut off. So long as they are watchful of this point it must be evident with the country open to their rear and with the advantage of knowing all the avenues and roads, fighting an enemy who is ignorant of them and who can likewise have but a small proportion, if any, cavalry, that nothing can expose them to any other danger than what their own energy or courage had determined them to face. When the enemy quits the coast these corps should fall upon his flank and rear and cut off all small detachments which venture from the main body in search of plunder." Late in 1803, at the time when all householders not in the Volunteers were ordered to become special constables, it was reported that the Lieutenancy had given directions that in case of invasion all horses likely to fall into the enemy's hands were to be either killed or hamstrung, axle trees of all wagons, wains and carts to be cut asunder and all cattle and corn to be destroyed, the fullest assurance being given to the owners that they would have ample compensation paid them. This notification evidently caused almost as much alarm as an actual descent of the enemy, for soon afterwards it was stated that the plan would not be carried out to the extent first intended. Such horses and draft cattle as were not wanted for military purposes in the district where the French had landed would be removed into the interior and in other places all the live stock would remain for the use of the army engaged in active operations.

FORMATION OF VOLUNTEER UNITS.

The Napoleonic War called into service in various degrees the greater part of the young manhood of the nation. The struggle was conducted overseas by the Regular Army recruited mainly by bounty and from the Militia. The battalions of the latter formed the standing garrison of the United Kingdom, but in the early years of the war they were reinforced by regiments of Fencible Cavalry and Infantry, enlisted, as their name implies, for the duration of the struggle, but not to serve out of the United Kingdom. They had mostly disappeared, however, by the peace in 1802 and were not resuscitated when the fighting was resumed. Then came the most significant evidence of the national character of the war—the establishment of volunteer units, an answer to Napoleon's

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

ADMIRAL SIR ELIAB HARVEY, G.C.B., of Rolls, Chigwell, who commanded the "Temeraire" at Trafalgar.

Digitized by Google

threat of invasion. Enlistment was sometimes for service in emergency within their own parish, but most often within the military district. There were in Essex two branches—cavalry and infantry. The first-named consisted of independent troops of Yeomanry Cavalry, only a few of which were numbered consecutively and gradually became welded into a regiment, the forerunners of the corps of mounted men which did such signal service in the war of 1914-1919. The Volunteer Infantry usually consisted of companies raised in each township or populous rural parish, separately administered and rarely being drilled as a battalion, though there were notable exceptions. Humorous stories have survived of the Volunteers of those days. The most popular skit, which ran through several editions, was that concerning the Coggeshall Volunteers. A study of contemporary papers, however, makes clear that this Volunteer movement was a serious contribution to national defence, and some of the units must have attained a considerable degree of proficiency. For a time there was a mounted force, known as the Provisional Cavalry, but it was an ill-timed effort of the Government and did not last long, being displaced by the Yeomanry Cavalry. The Volunteer Infantry were, however, in 1809 very largely superseded by the formation of battalions of Local Militia, so named in contradistinction to the County Militia, and recruited in part from the Volunteer Infantry. They were summoned annually to a month's training and very quickly became an important element in national defence, whilst the Volunteer infantry corps found it increasingly difficult to maintain interest and attendance. Efficient membership of the Local Militia or a Volunteer cavalry or infantry unit exempted a man from the Militia ballot and in notices of inspections and drills members were frequently warned that unless they attended more regularly they could not be returned as efficient. A regiment of Fencible Cavalry and a regiment of Fencible Infantry were raised in Essex, by authority given to a particular man—in the case of the Essex Light Dragoons to Sir Montague Burgoyne, of Mark's Hall, Harlow, and of the infantry battalion to Major James Urquhart, late of the 14th Regiment of Foot. Neither experienced difficulty in recruiting the numbers required.

A GREAT ESSEX SAILOR.

The only other force which the Napoleonic War brought into being was the Sea Fencibles, recruited from among the waterside population as a reinforcement of the naval personnel in case of an enemy landing. They did not exist long, because of the reluctance of the men to go afloat for fear of being shipped off to the West Indies, but the Sea Fencibles in Essex had the distinction of possessing as their first commander Captain Eliab Harvey, of Rolls Park, Chigwell. Captain Harvey—or, as he later became, Sir Eliab Harvey, G.C.B., Member for Essex—was the greatest sailor produced by Essex at this period and it is an appro-

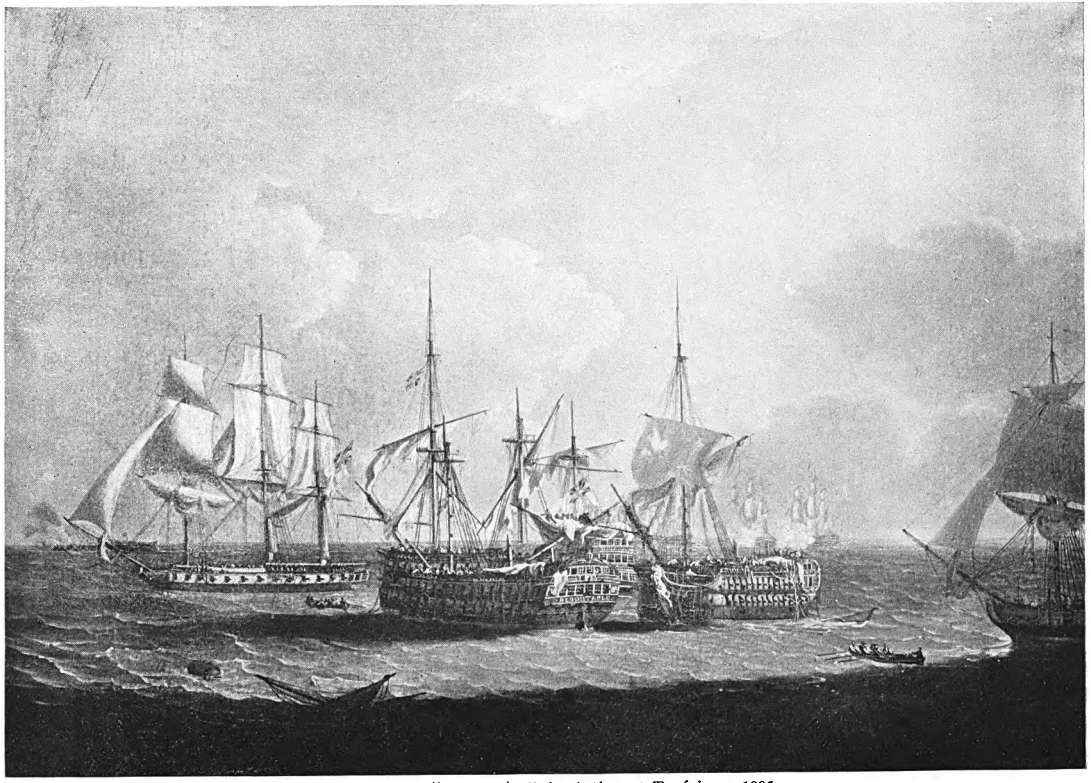
Digitized by Google

priate coincidence that a descendant of Admiral Harvey, of the "Fighting Temeraire," Lieut.-General Sir Francis Lloyd, G.C.V.O., K.C.B., D.S.O., also of Rolls Park, should command the London District during the war of 1914-1919. It was largely through the General's energy and enthusiasm that a great line of trenches was dug across South Essex for the defence of London. Capt. Harvey did not long remain in command of the Sea Fencibles. In July, 1802, he was elected to Parliament with Colonel John Bullock, of Faulkbourne Hall, by a "numerously and respectably attended" meeting of freeholders, held at the Shire Hall, Chelmsford. In November, 1803, Captain Harvey was appointed to the "Temeraire," a second rate, of 2,100 tons, having 98 guns, with a broadside of 1,050lb. She was then a new ship and at the Battle of Trafalgar, in 1805, there were only three of her class in commission, viz., "Dreadnought," "Neptune" and "Temeraire." The last-named was first employed under Cornwallis in the blockade off Brest, and was then detached to join the blockading fleet off Cadiz. She "was second in the line of the weather division," led by Nelson at the great engagement on October 21st, 1805, and Sir Julian Corbett has said of her commander, Captain Harvey, that his log showed he was by far the most detailed and methodical observer of the action. Harvey and the "Temeraire" live in naval annals because of a famous and much-discussed incident as the British line was bearing down upon the Franco-Spanish fleet. Captain Blackwood earnestly entreated Nelson that he should allow the "Temeraire" to pass ahead of the "Victory," so as to take the first shock of the encounter. Nelson grimly retorted that the "Temeraire" could pass if she could, and, as Captain Harvey made preparations to go ahead, Nelson ordered his ship to keep her station. Captain Harvey's letter describing the battle does not quite support this account of the affair. He makes it clear that he was ordered to lead the weather division and break the line about the fourteenth ship from the vanguard, but that, in consequence of Admiral Nelson's decision to take that position, as Admiral Collingwood had done in the lee division, Captain Harvey was signalled a quarter of an hour before firing commenced to take post immediately astern of the "Victory," which he accordingly did. When Nelson's flagship ran hard aboard the "Redoutable," the "Temeraire," followed by the "Neptune," passed through the broken line astern of the "Bucentaure," the flagship of Admiral Villeneuve, raking the French ship as they drifted by. The fight raged round Nelson and his flagship with intense fury for some hours and three of the enemy vessels foremost in their resistance to the attack of the "Victory" and "Temeraire" went down ere the day was ended—"Redoutable," "Fougueux" and "Bucentaure." The news of the victory and the part played by the captain of the "Temeraire" was received with great delight in Essex and at a

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

Digitized by Google



The Fighting "Temeraire" in Action at Trafalgar, 1805.
This picture hangs at Rolls, Chigwell, the Residence of Lieut.-General Sir Francis Lloyd, G.C.V.O., by whose permission it is reproduced.

Digitized by Google

county meeting at Chelmsford, on November 29th, 1805, after a general address of congratulation had been voted, special thanks were accorded to Captain Harvey, who had been promoted to the rank of Rear-Admiral, for the part he played in the victory. The Essex seaman had a great welcome when attending a county ball in the January following. At the Parliamentary Election in November, 1806, Admiral Harvey's services were enthusiastically recalled and he and his colleague were re-elected without a contest. The Admiral's supporters dined at the "Black Boy" and one of the signs exhibited was "Harvey and the Navy of Old England," whilst a pictorial device represented the Admiral in the "Temeraire" engaging at the same time two ships of equal force and which, after an obstinate resistance, were compelled to strike.

At Rolls Park there are carefully preserved many relics of the Essex Admiral. His portrait hangs in the dining room, whilst over the mantelpiece in the library is a painting illustrating the part played by the "Temeraire."[1] There, too, may be seen the secretaire which Admiral Harvey used, the silver cream jug, a favourite piece of plate, and three tables made from wood of the famous battleship. A pedestal bearing the bust of Dr. Harvey, the discoverer of the circulation of the blood, and an ancestor, is formed of part of the transom of the "Temeraire." The most prized possession, however, is the autograph letter which the Admiral wrote to his wife, Lady Louisa Harvey, describing Trafalgar. It was commenced on October 23rd, 1805, two days after the battle, and was not concluded until October 28th, when a brig left the fleet with mails, so fully occupied was the writer in taking his seriously damaged ship safely through the gale which raged after the conflict was over. The letter is headed "Temeraire, on her way to Gibraltar after the action of the 21st October, 1805." It discloses the curious fact that it was not until three days after the battle that the crew of the "Temeraire" heard of Nelson's death

The writer says: "You will, my dear, rejoice at the important events which I am about to relate and particularly so as our country will have the greatest reason to triumph—and that I am safe. For two days previous to the battle our frigates and the intermediate ships from them to the Fleet had informed us of the enemy's combined force having put to sea. We, of course, were all anxiety and expectation. The winds were light and from the westward. Lord Nelson with his fleet made sail for Gibraltar Strait and arrived within sight of Cape Trafalgar soon after daylight, the 20th, under the apprehension that they would have availed themselves of the opportunity which we gave them of passing the Gut and proceeding to Carthagena or Toulon. What was our delight on seeing the signal for the enemy to the northward and afterwards the signal for their being forty sail.

(1) This originally was at Skreens.

Digitized by Google

During the whole of the day repeated signals were made shewing their bearing and during the night we saw their lights, rockets, false fires. As soon as the day appeared, the 21st, we saw the fleet, which proved to be thirty-three sail of the line, French and Spanish—the rest frigates or smaller vessels—and although we had the advantage of the wind and they showed no disposition to avoid our attack, it was noon before the action commenced, which was done according to the instructions given to us by Lord Nelson. The first ship in action was the 'Royal Sovereign,' with Vice-Admiral Collingwood's flag on board. I did not see any other ship engaged before Lord Nelson opened his fire on the enemy, they having opened upon him and from the 'Santissima Trinidada'[1] about ten minutes, as well as from several other ships of theirs ahead of her. The 'Temeraire' at this time almost touched the stern of the 'Victory,' which station she had taken about ¼ hour previous to the enemy's having commenced their fire upon the 'Victory' in consequence of a signal made from the 'Victory.'

"You are to understand from this statement that we bore down upon the enemy in two columns. The weather column led by the Commander-in-Chief and the lee one by Vice-Admiral Collingwood, which occasioned my being astern instead of ahead of the 'Victory,' but Lord Nelson had sent to me and given me leave to lead and break through the enemy's line about the fourteenth ship from the van, but afterwards made the signal referred to above. From this period for two hours we were so nearly engaged that I can give you no other account of this part of this most glorious day's work than what immediately concerned the 'Victory' or myself. We were engaged with the 'Santissima Trinidada' and the other ships for perhaps twenty minutes or more, when for a minute or two I ceased my fire, fearing I might from the thickness of the smoak (*sic*) be firing into the 'Victory,' but I soon saw the 'Victory' close on board a French ship of two decks, and having the ship under command, notwithstanding we had suffered much in our masts and sails, I placed the ship so as to give this 'Redoutable' a most severe dressing by raking of her fore and aft. However, the 'Victory' fell on board of her and she struck and soon after they came on board the 'Temeraire,' so that the Frenchman was exactly between the two ships, being upon my larboard side. Some time previous to this, finding I could do nothing further with the ship, I had commenced upon another ship with my larboard guns and very soon put her into so disabled a state that we fell on board for her also.

"25th (at night).—I soon forced her to strike and sent Lieut. Kennedy, my first, with a party of men to secure this prize and finding the 'Victory' had got clear from the 'Redoutable,' I sent

(1) Flagship of the Spanish rear-admiral and largest of the enemy fleet.

Digitized by Google

my second lieutenant to secure her and ordered both their ships to be securely lashed to the 'Temeraire.' The 'Sta Anna,' a Spanish three-decker, having sailed (?) up all this time, when the smoak (*sic*) began to clear away I saw the 'Royal Sovereign' nearly in the place where I had seen the 'Santa Anna.' When about an hour or more I thought with us the battle was at an end and we had but to secure the captured ships and I had made a signal for a frigate to take us in tow, when behold! I was informed some of the enemy's ships were moving up astern of us. They proved to be four French ships, apparently in good order, their intention to escape to the southward.[1] When they were about three quarters of a mile to windward they opened their guns upon the 'Temeraire' and her prizes and for some time I could return no guns, but when those we could fight with were brought to bear upon the enemy, the gentlemen thought proper to haul to a more respectable distance and thus towards evening was ended this most glorious action and perhaps never was a ship so circumstanced as mine to have for more than three hours two of the enemy's line of battleships lashed to her, one upon each side, in one of, if not the most decided actions ever fought. Soon after the firing ceased the 'Sirius,' who had bore down in obedience to my signal, came and took the 'Temeraire' in tow. The 'Phoebe' took one of the prizes in tow and this is all I have from my own observation the power to mention.

"At this time our object was to go to Gibraltar, but the wind was contrary and with almost constant and severe gales ever since has prevented our getting there. The state of the 'Temeraire' is so bad we have been in constant apprehension of our lives, every sail and yard having been destroyed and nothing but the lower masts left standing. The rudder head almost shot off and is since quite gone and the lower masts all shot through and through in many places.

"25th (Saturday).—Since Monday we have had severe S. and S.S.W. winds and are now anchored off the enemy's coast in the state above-mentioned. The weather having been so bad, I could not continue my journal. The death of Lord Nelson we did not know until yesterday by signal from the 'Defiance' (Captain Denham). How much must our country lament this gallant and valuable man! We have nothing like him to supply his place. We anchored this morning at 7 o'clock and are not more than four leagues from a part of the Spanish coast not far from Cadiz.

"We can see (on) six different bearings, five dismantled ships, five which are compleat (*sic*), but were not in action, are supposed to be Admiral Lewis' Squadron from Gibraltar; the 'Defence,' who joined me yesterday, but keeps under weigh with the 'Phoebe' frigate, and two English, one a three decker, at a distance. The

(1) ?Dumanoir's squadron.

Digitized by Google

'Sirius' kept me in tow for two days, but Admiral Collingwood made the signal then to leave me, as the enemy's ships were attempting to cut some of our prizes.[1] The 'Africa' the day after Thursday came near to us in the morning and said nothing until the evening, when she informed me Adml. Collingwood had sent him to see me into port. I desired him to stay by the ship, but the good Capt. Digby thought proper to take care of himself and made off in the night. The blowing up of the ship, I believe a Spanish one, was the most extraordinary and magnificent which can be conceived. We saw another explosion from a ship on fire upon the Wednesday evening, but from the distance which she was off it was by no means the same thing. I know not when we shall get into port. We are all harassed to death and when we do arrive at Gibraltar I fear our accommodations will be but bad."

The crippled ship had not arrived at Gibraltar by October 28th, for on that day there was the following hurried addition to the letter: "An opportunity offers of sending my returns of killed and wounded—killed 47, badly wounded 31, slightly 45—in all 123. You must write to my sisters, Stowe, etc., as I shall have no opportunity, the 'Scourge,' brig, having no time to lose. . . I am quite well safe at anchor three leagues from the coast of Spain. The winds constantly from the S. to W., we can make no progress until a change of wind. The weather at present is moderate, but ever since the battle it has been very bad, almost a constant gale of wind with constant rain, shocking for our poor wounded. . . . How happy I shall be to see you all next month or December."

The ravages of war were as widespread then as over a century later, for an elder brother of the Admiral's, Stephen Harvey, a lieutenant in the 12th Regiment of Foot, was killed at Saratoga, in the American War of Independence, whilst the surviving son of the captain of the "Temeraire," a captain in the Coldstream Guards, was killed in the lines before Burgos, Spain, in 1813.

THE ESSEX LIGHT DRAGOONS.

Upon the declaration of war with the French Republic, on February 1st, 1793, and the despatch of regular troops abroad, it became imperative to raise additional corps for garrison duty in the United Kingdom, and particularly in Ireland. In March, 1794, Mr. Montague Burgoyne, of Mark's Hall, Harlow, received a letter of service authorizing him to raise, at his own expense, a regiment (six troops) of Fencible Cavalry for duty in Great Britain, Ireland or the Channel Islands and which, upon formation, was known as the "Loyal Essex Regiment of Fencible Cavalry" being among the first eight of such regiments to be formed. Col. Burgoyne, the son of Sir Roger Burgoyne, of Sutton,

(1) ? Cosmao's squadron from Cadiz.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Bedfordshire, was Chamberlain of the Till Office in the Exchequer and a prominent Essex man. Recruiting was so brisk that the unit was raised within a few weeks. At a county meeting, held at the Shire Hall, Chelmsford, on April 29th, 1794, called for the purpose of raising volunteers for the two Militia battalions, a resolution was unanimously carried that the thanks of the county be given to Mr. Burgoyne for his extraordinary exertions in raising the regiment and that it should be called the "Essex Light Dragoons," by which name it was henceforth known. The regiment was trained in and about Harlow, and at Harlow Bush Common, in July, 1794, it was inspected by Lieut-General Sloper prior to being passed for service. The General expressed his pleasure at the appearance and discipline of the men and horses and though only two months had passed since formation, not a single man or horse was rejected; the evolutions, we are told by a contemporary newspaper report, were "performed with a correctness and steadiness that would have done honour to an old regiment." General Sloper having given his certificate of fitness for service, the Light Dragoons, who wore green uniforms with black facings, moved from Harlow Bush Common to Warley Common, and in September, to the number of 212, they rode through London on their route to Exeter, saluting as they passed Carlton House, the residence of the Duke of York. Whilst in Devonshire the regiment earned much praise for assistance rendered at a farm fire, when by their exertions a barn full of corn and the village adjoining were saved. In May, 1795, an augmentation of two troops was authorized and active and successful steps were taken to obtain the requisite number of men. On May 23rd a great gathering was organized on Harlow Bush Common "as a token of approbation of the Essex Light Dragoons" and to afford "an opportunity to see those who are on recruiting service." There were the customary attractions. An ox was roasted whole, whilst the sports were vigorous and exciting. A silver laced hat was the prize of a foot race, a scarlet coat was to adorn the victor in the contest with cudgels and the champion wrestler bore away with pride a pair of buckskin breeches. The women were not forgotten, for the first home in a foot race was promised a fine shift. A noteworthy competition was the offer of a gold medal, value £5 5s., or £5 5s. in cash, to the man and woman who had brought up the greatest number of children with the least parochial assistance. It is not surprising that with such a range of attractions men and women flocked in from far and near, and wagons left Braintree, Chelmsford and Romford the day before, in order to be in time for the festivities. By August the two troops had been completed and marched through London to Bath, where the regiment was then stationed. It was also in August that the Essex people handed over a standard which had been purchased by subscription to the Light Dragoons, the trophy being received by Col. M. Burgoyne

Digitized by Google

and a detachment drawn up on Harlow Bush Common. It was this standard which was consecrated and delivered to the regiment with much ceremony on Nov. 26th, 1795. The corps paraded in front of the residence of the Duke of York in the Crescent, Bath. In the presence of the Mayor and Corporation of Bath, Colonel Monson produced the colours, and as the Duke and Duchess appeared at the window they were received with the salute and the band played "God Save the King." An address was then delivered by Rev. Dr. Randolph, after which the Duchess of York presented the colours to Colonel Burgoyne. In the evening the Colonel entertained the Duke of York, Lord Malmesbury, the Mayor and Corporation and others to dinner at the Guildhall. Upon disbandment the standard was borne by the Union Legion of Volunteer Cavalry and Infantry, which Colonel Burgoyne had also raised, and which carried it proudly whilst upon a visit to Chelmsford in 1804, the trophy then being described as bearing upon it in gold the names of the 300 subscribers. The latter met at the Cock Inn, Epping, in March, 1796, to pay their donations and also to enjoy the plentiful repast which followed such occasions. In May, 1796, the Dragoons were reviewed, with the Hants Militia, in Hyde Park by George III, who complimented them upon their appearance. The regiment was subsequently stationed at Deal, and by April, 1797, was in Newcastle. According to the muster roll of that month the Fencibles consisted, in addition to the Colonel Commandant, of 17 officers, chaplain, quartermaster, 43 sergeants, 12 trumpeters, 43 corporals and 254 troopers; 372 of all ranks, with Mr. J. Scudamore, M.P., as the lieutenant-colonel. At that time of grave anxiety owing to the Mutiny at the Nore, the privates, in common with many other units, offered to give £100 reward for the discovery of any person who endeavoured to seduce a comrade from his duty and allegiance. Early in 1798, when large sums were raised by voluntary subscription for the prosecution of the war, the Light Dragoons offered three days' pay and a day's pay per month until the conclusion of peace, whilst Colonel Burgoyne gave his pay as colonel commandant as a contribution to the cause. In July of that year there was a further augmentation of the establishment and an advertisement for recruits offered six guineas as a bounty, with an undertaking that the men would not be sent out of the United Kingdom of Great Britain, "without their particular desire." Within a month the men were practically all raised, for Colonel Burgoyne notified his thanks, reporting there were a few vacancies. In the Autumn of 1798 came the French landing in Ireland and the Light Dragoons were embarked from Ayr at a moment's notice. Just before leaving the freedom of that Burgh was conferred by the Magistrates, for which Lieut.-Colonel Scudamore returned thanks. Not a man was left behind when the regiment marched out "with drums and band playing and amidst the acclamations of the inhabitants,"

Digitized by Google

for even those who were in sick quarters immediately rose and joined their comrades. The Dragoons disembarked at Carrickfergus and were proceeding to join General Lake's army when they received word of the surrender of the French and the collapse of the insurrection. They were then ordered to Newry, County Down. The regiment served for a time in Ireland (Blackrock, Dublin, Rathcole and Drogheda) and was in existence in 1799, but it was disembodied soon after. To mark that occasion each officer and man who had served throughout was presented with a silver medal, having on the obverse in the centre three scimitars surrounded by a garter with the motto, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*, and in the scroll below, *Tuebor*. On the reverse were the words, "Essex Light Dragoons," and round the rim of the medal, "Reward for Military Virtue from Colonel Montague Burgoyne." Colonel Burgoyne subsequently received a baronetcy in recognition of his services. Though in later years appointed Verderer of Epping Forest, he was unsuccessful in his appeal to the freeholders of Essex at the General Election of 1802. His political views did not find favour with the restricted electorate which then existed. At the General Election of November, 1806, he unsuccessfully endeavoured to obtain assent to a series of resolutions which had been previously passed by a meeting of "gentlemen, clergy and freeholders" in favour of economy, equal pressure of taxation upon all classes of subjects, including the repeal of the property tax, which bore hardly on the landed interest, and a fair and equitable commutation of tithe consistent with the support of the Church and the rights of individuals. Colonel Burgoyne's political activity continued and in February, 1808, he issued an address to the freeholders of Essex advocating the reform of existing abuses. He offered in October of that year to raise a regiment of cavalry to serve in Spain or Portugal, but it was not accepted and he continued political agitation with unabated energy. The death of Colonel Bullock, one of the sitting members, brought about an election early in 1810 and Colonel Burgoyne, as an independent, but with Whiggish inclinations, opposed Colonel J. A. Houblon, when he was again beaten by 2,519 votes to 811 after a fifteen days' poll. The defeated candidate claimed that he was standing to recover the political independence of Essex, urging that the existing representation of two members—one Whig and one Tory—was the result of an arrangement between the parties. His supporters subsequently formed an organization known as the "Friends of the Freedom of Election and the Independence of the County," but Colonel Burgoyne could not make headway and when, after a seven days' poll in October, 1812, his two opponents were beating him as severely as in 1810, he withdrew from the contest. In September, 1806, the Colonel's services in raising the Essex Union Legion (Volunteer Cavalry and Infantry) were recognized by the presentation to him of a piece of plate by the officers.

Digitized by Google

A regiment of Fencible Infantry was also raised by Major J. E. Urquhart, late of 14th Foot, whose warrant was dated October 24th, 1794, and who became colonel commanding, the lieut.-colonel being R. B. Sparrow. It was known as the Loyal Essex Fencible Infantry and had ten companies. Recruiting was speedily accomplished and the corps was so well trained during the winter that on May 20th, 1795, it embarked for Ireland, where it remained on duty during the ensuing eight years until upon the conclusion of the Peace of Amiens it was disbanded. During that time it was quartered at Granard (County Longford), Waterford, Dublin, Enniskillen, Ballyshannon (where it remained two years), Longford and Nenagh, where it served with the Essex Fencible Cavalry. When Sir James Duff left the command of the Limerick District he issued a general order praising the behaviour of the Loyal Essex, "The regular good conduct of the regiment (who have been detached in a very disturbed part of the country) does them the highest credit."

FORMATION OF YEOMANRY CAVALRY.

Yeomanry Cavalry and Volunteer Infantry did not make their appearance in Essex until 1798. Under an Act of 1796, which provided for a ballot for sixty thousand Supplementary Militia, another force was called into being known as Provisional Cavalry. Owners of horses kept for riding or carriages were required to provide one trooper and horse for every ten of such horses, while those possessing fewer than ten were ordered to find their horse and man jointly. In February, 1797, it was stated that commissions in the new force were being rapidly taken up by "the most respectable gentlemen in the county," and in March the Lieutenancy gave instructions for assembly of the first muster as follows:

Brentwood Sub-division: Camp ground, Warley Common, April 3rd.
Chelmsford Sub-division: Near Race Course, Galleywood Common, April 4th.
Colchester Sub-division: Lexden Heath, April 3rd.
Dunmow Sub-division: Little Dunmow, April 8th.
Epping Sub-division: Thornwood Common, April 5th.
Hinckford Sub-division: 50 Mile Stone, Castle Hedingham, April 8th.
Ilford Sub-division: Wanstead Flats, April 8th.
Rochford Sub-division: Hackwell (Hawkwell) Common, April 6th.
Tendring Sub-division: Tendring Heath, April 4th.
Walden and Freshwell Sub-division: Saffron Walden Common, April 7th.
Witham Sub-division: Tiptree Heath, April 6th.

The force was organized into two corps—Eastern and Western. The former was commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Lewis Majendie and the latter by Lieut.-Colonel John Conyers. There is record

Digitized by Google

of a muster being ordered in January, 1798, to enable those who had not obtained them to receive certificates of conformity, but from that time onward the Provisional Cavalry disappeared, its place being taken by the troops of Yeomanry Cavalry which were formed in response to the Lord Lieutenant's appeal in April, 1798. Probably long ere that time the Provisional Cavalry existed only in name, for it was not a popular service. Fortescue tells us that within a few weeks of the Act being passed which brought the force into existence, another enactment provided that if any town or county should raise Volunteers equal to three-fourths of the number required under the original Act, then the Lord Lieutenant should have power to dispense with the Provisional Cavalry and raise Yeomanry.

In a return to the House of Commons of Yeomanry and Volunteer Cavalry to June 1st, 1798, preserved in the British Museum, there is record of an Essex troop of Yeomanry Cavalry with date of establishment April, 1797, which is probably that formed by Mr. Conyers, of Copt Hall. The next troop was Mr. William Tufnell's (Langleys), recruited in Chelmsford and district, and the date of establishment of which is given as February, 1798. Then follow Mr. J. A. Houblon's in March, and Lord Maynard's in April. The remaining troops are all given as being formed in May, viz., Kelvedon, or East Essex (T. T. Cock), Stebbing (Michael Pepper), Tendring (John Hanson), Havering (Jackson Barwis), Uttlesford (R. Raynsford), Colonel Burgoyne's or Loyal Essex, Haverhill (R. P. Todd, jun.), Castle Hedingham or Hinckford (L. Majendie), Halstead, Walthamstow and Hatfield Peverel (Peter Wright). The minimum establishment was 40, but in two instances it was stated to be 50 and in one case (Tendring), 60. Thus in four months there were 15 troops in existence in Essex, with an establishment of 640. There is also mention in the newspapers of the time of a Saling troop formed by a resident named Goodrich, and, as will be seen later, a Barstable and Chafford troop was raised by Sir Thomas Barrett-Lennard, of Belhus, Aveley. The movement received considerable impetus from a meeting of the Lieutenancy, held in April, 1798, when several offers to form units of cavalry, infantry and pioneers were accepted. The uniform of these corps is in some cases not known, but it lacked nothing in sartorial effect if we are to judge from a field day of the Tendring Volunteer Cavalry troop in August, when 45 of all ranks were present. They were dressed in scarlet hussar jackets with black facings, and decorated with silver lace, the helmets being described as "remarkably elegant" with the name upon them, "Tendring Cavalry." It was reported that officers of the East and West Lothian Fencible Cavalry who were present had not seen a finer body of men or better or more handsome horses.

The Lord Lieutenant, in 1801, was notified that there were seventeen troops then serving: 1st Essex, 52; 2nd Essex,

Digitized by Google

53; 3rd Essex, 38; 4th Essex, 63; 5th Essex, 36; East Essex, 30; West Essex, 53; Barstable and Chafford, 38; Epping Forest, 35; Freshwell, 40; Haverhill, 42; Havering, 46; Hedingham, 25; Halstead, 28; Stebbing, 42; Tendring, 40; Uttlesford, 45—a total of 17 corps, with a personnel of 706. The terms of enlistment are most interesting and are inserted here at the risk of wearying the reader, because they are essential to an appreciation of the varying conceptions of responsibility in different units: 1st Essex—Consent to place themselves under the command of a general officer within the Eastern Military District in case of actual invasion or imminent danger thereof. 2nd Essex—To obey the orders of the generals commanding within the said district and in case of invasion to march and assist in whatever military operations may be required of them. 3rd Essex—Agree to turn out under their captain to quell any riot or insurrection that may happen within 20 miles of the place of training, but not to be detained from home more than three days and upon the appearance of actual danger or invasion consider themselves under military discipline. 4th Essex—In case of invasion or imminent danger thereof to serve in any manner the general commanding the military district may think most essential. 5th Essex—To serve in the Eastern Military District. East Essex—To serve in any part of the County of Essex when necessity shall require. West Essex—To serve within the Military District in which the troop are situate in case of actual invasion or imminent danger thereof. Barstable and Chafford—To aid and assist the civil power within the Hundreds of Barstable and Chafford not exceeding a distance of seven miles from Stifford Bridge in case of emergency. Epping Forest—For the defence and special protection of the parish of Walthamstow and neighbourhood. Freshwell—To serve for the protection of the Hundred of Freshwell. Haverhill—In case of actual invasion or imminent danger thereof to serve within the Military District. Havering—Anywhere within the Eastern District. Hedingham—Area of service in case of invasion, Hundred of Hinckford. Halstead—Conditions of service not expressed. Stebbing—To act within a circle of ten miles from the village of Stebbing and not to be called out of the same unless in case of actual invasion. Tendring — To serve in any part of the Hundred of Tendring. Uttlesford—To act within the Hundreds of Uttlesford and Clavering on all occasions, but not to be called out of same. From a military point of view such restriction militated against their efficiency as part of the system of home defence, but the Government evidently agreed to their formation for a twin purpose—that of resisting a foreign invader, but also what was as important, if not more so at a time of considerable unrest, the liability to aid the civil power in case of disturbance. During the war of 1914-19 the task of preserving order and

Digitized by Google

enforcing emergency edicts was the responsibility of the Police Force, which, though depleted in personnel by members being called up for military service, was, in fact, reinforced by tens of thousands of special constables, enrolled from amongst the civil population. In 1798 no force of equal serviceability was available to the executive and they must have welcomed the formation of military bodies, bound by their oath upon enlistment to enforce civil order as well as to oppose an enemy landing.

PRESENTATION OF COLOURS.

The story of the formation of the Barstable and Chafford Troop of Volunteer Cavalry has been written by the late Sir Thomas Barrett-Lennard, Bart., late of Belhus, Aveley, whose great grandfather raised the unit. After the meeting at Chelmsford Mr. Barrett-Lennard (created a baronet in 1801) wrote from Hacton, on May 5th, 1798, stating that illness had prevented attendance and making the following offer to serve "my King and Country at this momentous crisis: Should it meet your approbation have reason to believe that I can raise an armed association of cavalry to consist of about fifty of the principal farmers and land-holders in my neighbourhood who are ready to show their loyalty and attachment to the Constitution; and as we are situated near Purfleet, a great and important depot for gun powder, should think such a troop might be useful in protecting the magazines and its vicinity, should your Lordship approve of the terms which (considering their occupations) 'tis in their power to offer; which are, first, that they shall not be called upon to serve beyond the distance of ten miles from Aveley; that every man provides his dress and bears his own expenses of every kind except arms, accoutrements and ammunition; that every man be at liberty to demand his discharge from the said association whenever he thinks proper upon delivery of his arms and ammunition to his commanding officer or any neighbouring Magistrate; that they shall not be drafted or attached to any other corps or association, but do pledge themselves to assist the civil power in defence of the King and Country, and will enforce by example a due obedience to the laws of the land." In due time Sir Thomas Barrett-Lennard received his commission as "Captain in a Troop of Cavalry of the Association of the Parish of Aveley and its vicinity," "associated to serve without pay, for the protection thereof, in case of any emergency, at the requisition of the civil power; but not to take rank in our army, nor the said Association to be subject to military discipline, or to serve out of the said parish and its vicinity, except of their own accord." It will be noted that the terms of service strictly limited the scope of duty of the new troop and such a practice was by no means uncommon.

The troop was quickly raised. Mrs. Barrett-Lennard was an expert needlewoman and worked two banners for the corps.

Digitized by Google

These were presented on a great day in August, 1799, and we are indebted to Lady Dacre, who handed over the colours, for a graphic contemporary description of the ceremony of presentation and celebrations which followed. Writing from Belhouse (Belhus) on August 21st, 1799, to Sir Thomas's sister (Mrs. Hichens), Lady Dacre first described the breakfast with which the proceedings commenced. The tables in the dining parlour were plentifully filled with everything good, such as beef, veal, hams, tongues and fowls, potted meat, tarts, salads, etc., chiefly served upon plate. The kitchen staff had exerted their skill " in turning the various sorts of meat into gimcracks "—one ham appeared to be a swan, another an old woman resting herself on a lawn, boys getting over stiles, a goose swimming and fish in water. Evidently these comestibles were in the nature of a surprise, for the guests did not know whether they were to be eaten, " as many of the dishes were covered with lard, but when the discovery was made they sliced away and were delighted." In the bow window there were coffee and chocolate and in the breakfast parlour, which communicated direct with the dining parlour, was a long table upon which there were rolls and hot cakes, and from which tea was served. They had good appetites in those days—" The men not only stuffed off what is above described in the eating way, but would have tea and coffee brought them, though there was as much red and white wine as they chose set on the table with the meat. In short, the stuffage continued for at least an hour." It was computed that, with the yeomen their wives and neighbours for miles around, at least 150 had breakfast. A procession was afterwards formed to Aveley Church by way of the windmill—first the coach and four horses, containing Lady Dacre, Mrs. Lennard, with Mr. Russell and Mr. Tyler in charge of the colours, then two troops (Barwis's and Lennard's) and thirteen carriages. The troopers lined the churchyard, but the colour party, with the ladies, proceeded into the church, followed by such a large gathering " that no room remained and dreadfully hot it was." The colours having been consecrated and the Coronation Anthem sung by the Hornchurch Band, there was Morning Prayer and a sermon by Mr. Wilson, Vicar of Grays, who preached from the text, Psalm xx, part of verse 5: "In the name of our God we will set up our banners." The service over, the procession returned to Belhus Park, where two tents had been pitched " just by the gravel pit." The two troops having formed up, Lady Dacre handed over the banners to their custody with a short speech " which I redde," and Captain Barrett-Lennard returned thanks from horseback, which " was respectful, but not fulsome." The Yeomanry then performed an exercise which they had practised for several days before, and Lady Dacre was escorted home amid cheering—" So ended my part—I had like to have said farce—of the day." Subsequently the two troops dined at Aveley, to which feast Lady

Digitized by Google

Dacre gave a very fat buck and "excepting your brother there was not a sober man of the party. I exclude, however, our two stewards." In 1801 the troop consisted of 38 persons, recruited, however, over a wide area: Aveley, Orsett and Rainham, four each, Horndon-on-the-Hill, Little Thurrock, Stanford-le-Hope and Upminster three each, Mucking, Vange, Wennington and West Tilbury two each, and Chadwell, Corringham, East Tilbury, Grays, North Ockendon and West Thurrock one each. Two years later authority was obtained to augment the men to 60 (Lady Dacre's letter shows the corps was two troops in strength in 1799) and troopers were enrolled from Navestock, Hornchurch, Laindon and Little Warley. Sir Thomas Barrett-Lennard points out that munitions were served out with niggard hand—"only one tent was to be issued to each 30 men, while in order that raw, unskilled men might be sufficiently trained in the use of their weapons, only 24 rounds of ball and 60 rounds of blank ammunition to each man were allowed in any one year. No one but a Government official could hope to teach an untrained man to use his musket efficiently if he was to have only 24 shots a year out of it." In 1804 it was decided to have a fortnight's training of the troop with the Havering Cavalry at Brentwood, but although official authority was obtained, it is not certain that the camp was held. Captain Barrett-Lennard resigned in 1805, when the Barstable and Chafford troop was presumed to have been amalgamated with the Havering troops, but it was not until 1816 that the Office for Military Accounts finally settled outstanding matters with him.

DUKE OF YORK'S INSPECTION.

The Government encouraged the troops of Yeomanry Cavalry to remain in being during the short-lived Peace of Amiens, so that there was not much change either in organization or personnel when the fighting came again. This fact is revealed at the inspection by H.R.H. the Duke of York, held in August, 1803. The Commander-in-Chief, who was accompanied by his brother, the Duke of Cambridge, and staff, arrived at Colchester from Ipswich on Sunday, August 28th, and was greeted by a salute of 21 guns planted on East Bridge. He immediately inspected the Loyal Colchester Volunteers, commanded by Colonel James Bawtree, and expressed his approbation of their appearance, promising they would soon be furnished with arms. The troop of East Essex Volunteer Cavalry, under Captain Gill, were drawn up on the right of the infantry and the Duke also complimented them. On Monday he made a tour of encampments in the vicinity of Colchester, and early on Tuesday the Commander-in-Chief reviewed the garrison on Lexden Heath, being highly pleased with the parade. The Duke then left for Chelmsford, which he reached by mid-day. It was proposed to inspect both cavalry and infantry on

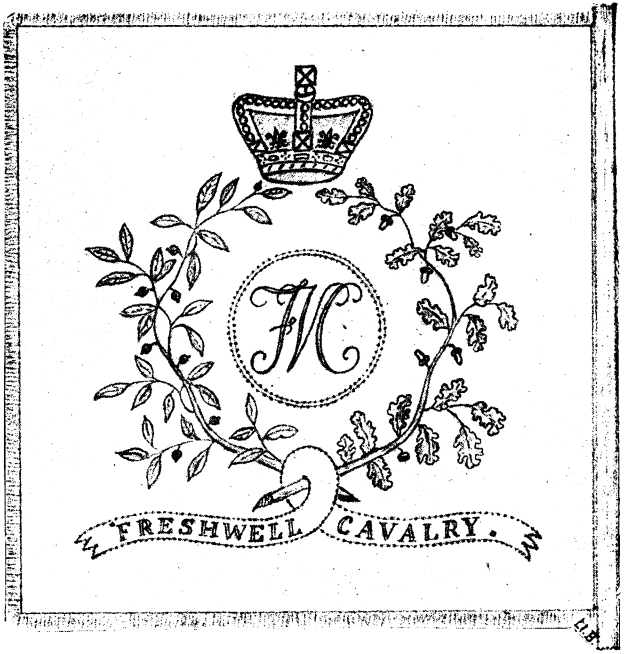
Digitized by Google

Galleywood Common about a mile from the Old Barrack, but rain came down in torrents and His Royal Highness cancelled the march out of the two battalions of the Guards, contenting himself by watching their march past the residence of Maj.-General Finch, where he took refreshment. Meanwhile, the 9th Light Dragoons and the respective corps of Yeomanry Cavalry had formed in line on the lower part of the race course. The whole composed a fine body of a 1,000 horsemen, armed and accoutred. The arrival of the Duke was announced at 1.30 p.m. by a triple discharge of guns. His Royal Highness was mounted on a grey charger and with him were the Duke of Cambridge, Lord Braybrooke, Sir James Craig, K.B., Major-Generals Finch and Beckwith. Each unit was inspected in detail and afterwards the Commander-in-Chief thanked the troops for their admirable appearance. After inspecting 3,000 men of the Royal Lancashire Militia, the Duke viewed the chain of redoubts and batteries formed on the north-western heights of the Common, after which he proceeded straight to London. His attendance was required at a Cabinet Council and, in consequence, an engagement to dine with Lord Petre at Thorndon Hall was cancelled. Subsequently Lieut.-General Sir James Craig, commanding the Eastern District, at the request of the Duke, expressed the very great satisfaction His Highness had derived from "observing the general spirit and zeal with which the troops have, at this important crisis, come forward and enrolled themselves in defence of their country. The energy which has marked their conduct on this occasion affords the best security for the continuation of the invaluable blessings we have so long enjoyed and is at the same time the most honourable testimony of their attachment to the King and of their determination to preserve entire the Religion, the Independence and unrivalled Constitution which we received from our ancestors."

The Yeomanry Cavalry present at the review do not show much variation from the corps which were formed in and about 1798. They were:

1st Troop of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, John Conyers.
2nd Troop of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, Wm. Tufnell.
3rd Troop of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, J. A. Houblon.
4th Troop of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, Viscount Maynard.
5th Troop of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, M. Burgoyne.
Hatfield Peverel Cavalry, P. L. Wright.
Loyal Havering Cavalry, R. Newman.
Uttlesford and Clavering Cavalry, R. Raynsford.
Halstead Volunteer Cavalry, J. G. Sparrow.
Epping Forest Volunteer Cavalry, John Rigg.
Barstable and Chafford Yeomanry Cavalry, Sir T. Barrett-Lennard, Bart.
Freshwell Volunteer Cavalry, Allen Taylor.
Haverhill Volunteer Cavalry, R. P. Todd.
Wakering Volunteer Cavalry, Jonas Asplin.

Digitized by Google



BANNER OF THE FRESHWELL VOLUNTEER CAVALRY. (The colour of the silk is cerise).

Reproduced from an article upon "Essex Volunteer Cavalry in Napoleonic Wars," by Rev. Llewellyn Bullock, by kind permission of the proprietors of "The Essex Review."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

According to a Parliamentary return, dated December, 1803, there were then 23 troops in Essex, with a total strength of 1,251 made up as follows:

Halstead, J. G. Sparrow	.. 59
Hatfield Peverel, P. Wright	.. 68
Uttlesford and Clavering, John Wolfe	.. 60
Epping Forest, John Rigg	.. 65
Chafford and Barstable, Sir T. Barrett-Lennard, Bart. (two troops)	.. 80
1st Essex, John Conyers	.. 86
2nd Essex, Wm. Tufnell	.. 67
3rd Essex, J. A. Houblon	.. 80
4th Essex, Viscount Maynard	.. 92
5th Essex (Harlow), Montague Burgoyne (four troops)	.. 160
Freshwell Hundred, Allen Taylor	.. 57
Havering, Richard Newman (three troops)	.. 120
Haverhill, R. P. Todd	.. 56
Wakering, Jonas Asplin	.. 41
Colchester, William Gill (two troops)	.. 80
East Essex, T. Cock	.. 80

Hatfield Peverel, 2nd Essex (Chelmsford and district) and Harlow troops also had dismounted companies, numbering 146, 110 and 180 respectively.

A return of officers in 1804 reveals that one of the two troops of Chafford and Barstable had become the Aveley troop, with Sir T. Barrett-Lennard in command, whilst Mr. Aaron Hurrell was the captain of the former. The Colchester Cavalry were known as the 1st East Essex and those commanded by Captain Cock as the 2nd East Essex. The Hatfield Peverel men were described as the East Essex Legion, whilst Colonel Montague Burgoyne's force designated in 1803 as 5th (Harlow) troop of the Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, in reality comprising a regiment of four troops, had expanded to the Essex Union Legion. Sir William Hilary, of Danbury Park, had raised the First Essex Legion, consisting of two battalions of infantry, but it also included a troop of cavalry led by Mr. Wm. Kitcher.

The return prepared by John Willson of the Volunteer Army in 1806 does not give the Uttlesford and Clavering, Chafford and Barstable, 4th Essex and Freshwell Hundred troops, whilst Major Peter Wright is noted as commanding the West Ham Legion, which is probably a mistake, the East Essex Legion being intended. The efficient Yeomen then numbered 1,035, and the return also affords interesting information concerning the uniforms of some of the corps. Epping Forest troop were clad in scarlet coats, with brown collars and cuffs and white pantaloons; the 2nd East Essex and 1st Essex in blue, the

Digitized by Google

latter with brown cuffs and collars; Halstead, Wakering and Havering cavalry in blue coats and white collars and cuffs, and white pantaloons, and Haverhill in scarlet, with brown collars and cuffs and yellow pantaloons.

THE VOLUNTEER INFANTRY.

A sketch of the military effort of the time would be incomplete without reference to the infantry. They were raised in the same independent manner as the cavalry, each town or district supplying a company. The growth of the movement, however, made closer organization necessary and in some cases battalions were formed. One of the most notable efforts was that at Colchester, which then had a population of less than 14,000. Raised in 1797, mainly through the efforts of the Mayor of Colchester (Mr. Wm. Mason), the volunteer company was over-strength in May, 1798, and had to be divided into two companies. In October of that year, known as the Loyal Colchester Volunteers and commanded by Captain Mason, they received their colours, the gift of Major Thornton, from the hands of Lady Howe in Major Blatch's field, the ground being kept by the grenadier and light companies of the East Essex Regiment and Captain Hanson's troop of Yeomanry Cavalry. In 1802 the Government notified that it did not desire the infantry corps to continue and, in common with the rest of the force, the Colchester men handed in their arms. When war broke out again the War Office suspended the operation of Levy en Masse Act, which required that men enrolled in each parish must be exercised and trained, in consequence of the response made by Volunteer Corps in Essex. Several meetings were held in Colchester and on July 30th, 1803, Colonel John Bawtree was able to report to the Lord Lieutenant that it was hoped to form ten companies of from 60 to 80 men each, upon the following terms:

(1) That the men will at all times obey and support the Magistrates of the Borough.

(2) That in the absence of the military they will take charge of and defend any stores which may be left in the barracks or other military post within the Borough and in case of actual invasion they will immediately be ready to march to any post of the Eastern District and put themselves under command of such general officer as shall be appointed by His Majesty and will serve under the same regulations as other Volunteer Corps, but that they shall not be drafted into any other corps and shall continue under the immediate command of their own officers.

(3) That the Corps shall be formed and serve without any expense to the Government other than for arms, accoutrements, ammunition and drums and for drill sergeants to teach them their exercise.

By August 16th Colonel Bawtree reported that between 600 and 700 men were already enrolled to serve according to the 43rd

Digitized by Google

Act of George III and that he had no doubt the whole 800 men would be obtained during that week. One hundred stand of arms, the property of the late Volunteer Corps, were in hand, but in addition there were required 700 stand of arms, with the same number of white belts, bayonets, cartouche boxes, thirty pikes and swords for sergeants, ten drums and two bugle horns and twenty swords and belts for drummers and fifers. Ten drill sergeants were also asked for, one to each company. Their inspection, without arms, by the Duke of York has been already noted and difficulty for a time was experienced in arming the men. At the end of August orders were given for the issue of arms to one half the Volunteer strength, but there was much disappointment when it was found that they were Prussian muskets. The Board of Ordnance declared the weapons to be perfectly serviceable, expressing the hope that the Volunteers would submit to any little inconvenience resulting merely from their weight. In common with their comrades, the Loyal Colchesters received orders in October, 1803, to be ready to march on service at the shortest notice. Over £2,000 was subscribed by Colchester towards defraying the cost of equipping the corps. Another notable unit was the Essex Legion, formed in 1803 from residents of Dengie Hundred and Maldon. It was raised by Sir William Hillary, of Danbury Place, who, in later years, when a resident of the Isle of Man, was a founder of the Royal Lifeboat Institution. The Legion consisted of two battalions of infantry, with a troop of cavalry, a detachment of artillery with two brass field pieces, and a company of pioneers, the establishment being 1,500 effectives, of whom 1,196 were infantry. The corps was reviewed in October, 1804, in Danbury Park by the Duke of Sussex. Rochford Hundred also raised a battalion of infantry in 1798, with an independent company at Rayleigh. The uniform of the former was of scarlet with black facings and the arrangement was to train in four divisions—eastern, southern, central and western—three times a week after 6 p.m., and the battalion to assemble at Rochford once in every month. In September the unit numbered 15 officers and 260 men, in addition to a band belonging to the Rochford section. A detachment of pioneers was recruited with the Wakering Company. A month later, under the command of Captain J. Barrington, the battalion was inspected by Major General Burton, commanding the troops at Chelmsford, and he expressed his pleasure at the appearance of the men. In the evening the General was entertained to dinner at the New Ship Inn, Rochford, by the officers, with Captain Sumner in the chair, and the time, we are told, was "spent in the greatest conviviality." West Ham, in 1804, had a strong force, although it did not rank as a battalion. The Major-Commandant was Mr. Wm. Manbey and the strength close upon 600. The Loyal Hinckford Hundred Volunteers had an authorized establishment of ten companies (nine of 60 and one of 80 rank

Digitized by Google

and file), but it never reached that strength. The Colonel-Commandant was the Marquis of Buckingham, who took a great interest in the corps, and the Lieut.-Colonel was Mr. R. Astle. Ongar Hundred also had a battalion, with a rifle company in addition, supported by the neighbouring landowners, without expense to the Government.

Catholic disability in that age is recalled by Lord Petre's offer in April, 1798, to form companies of pioneers among his tenants free of all expense—one at Thorndon Hall and the other for the parishes of Ingatestone, Fryerning, Mountnessing and Margaretting. They were to include all necessary carriages, horses, drivers and implements. The Hon. Mr. Petre also proposed to raise a Volunteer company, for which he had a list of sixty names. In an edition of *The Essex Chronicle* a week or two later it was announced that Lord Petre, notwithstanding the legal difficulty which had suspended for the present the appointment of the Hon. Mr. Petre as captain commanding the Volunteer company, did not intend to relax his efforts to render the company fit for service as expeditiously as possible—and he was true to his word. In 1803 his offer to raise another Volunteer company was again refused for the same reason.

In 1801 there were 18 infantry corps, with a strength of 957, and the terms of the enlistment are happily preserved to us in a return to the Lord Lieutenant: Barking—For the defence and special protection of the parish of Barking and to the extent of five miles from Ilford. Great Clacton: To serve in Great Clacton and its limits against any enemy, foreign or domestic. Colchester—The nature of the service is the extent of the County of Essex in case of actual invasion or imminent danger thereof. Chipping Ongar—For the defence and special protection of the parish of Chipping Ongar and neighbourhood. Chelmsford—For the general defence and special protection of the town and the limits of Chelmsford. Harwich—For the local defence and security of the Borough of Harwich and its vicinity within five miles of the said Borough. Ingatestone—To serve to the extent of ten miles round Ingatestone. Kelvedon—For the defence and special protection of the towns of Kelvedon, Coggeshall and neighbourhood within the distance of five miles from Kelvedon, that town being considered the central point. King's Hatfield—To serve for the protection of the five following parishes, Hatfield Broad Oak, Sheering, Matching and Great and Little Hallingbury. Layton—For the aid of the civil power and for the defence of the four adjoining parishes of Layton, Walthamstow, Wanstead and Woodford, and to serve within parts of same. Rochford Hundred (northern, southern, central and eastern sections and Rayleigh)—To be called out into active service and to march to any part of Rochford Hundred. Romford—To serve within the Liberty of Havering-atte-Bower and within six miles of the

Digitized by Google

Obverse.

Reverse.

Medal given to the West Ham and East Ham Volunteers of 1798 by Sir John Henniker, Stratford House, Essex, in 1799, to commemorate their service when invasion was threatened by the French. On the obverse is seen a volunteer in full uniform, with the inscription, "The Loyal United West and East Ham Volunteers," and below, "Associated May 18, 1798." Round the edge of the reverse side are the words, "For Preservation of Internal Peace, our King and Constitution." Medals were also presented at different times to other Essex units, viz., Colchester Loyal Volunteers (1805), Dedham Volunteers (1802), Essex Volunteer Cavalry (1805), Havering Cavalry (1800), Walthamstow Volunteers (1802).

Taken from "Napoleon and the Invasion of England" (Wheeler and Broadley) and reproduced by kind permission of the publishers, John Lane, The Bodley Head, Ltd.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

town of Romford in aid of the civil power commanded by the officers of their choosing and government finding arms and ammunition. Roxwell—For the special defence of the immediate neighbourhood. Woodford—To serve in the parish and neighbourhood and half Hundred of Becontree.

The return of the Volunteer Army, prepared by John Willson, in 1806, gave thirty-two infantry, rifle and pioneer units, with an efficient strength of 5,901, which, with the Yeomanry, represented a Volunteer force of just under 7,000 for Essex. The corps, with their strength, commanders and uniforms, were: Baddow, 89, Captain Jas. W. Hull; Barking, 175, Major G. Spurrell, scarlet coat, yellow collar and cuffs and white pantaloons, with silver lace for officers; Loyal Chelmsford, 147, Major Thomas F. Gepp, scarlet, blue and blue; Colchester, 600, Lieut.-Colonel John Bawtree, scarlet, green, white, gold; Dedham, 71, Captain Wm. Eyre, scarlet, brown, yellow, silver; Loyal Dunmow, 146, Captain Rd. Pearson, scarlet, brown, yellow, silver; Loyal Pioneers, 79, Captain W. Lukin, blue, white, white, gold; East Ham, 60, Captain A. Harrison, scarlet, yellow, white, gold; West Ham, 237, Major Wm. Manby, scarlet, yellow, white, gold; Loyal Harwich, 120, Captain John Hopkins, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; Hinckford, 680, Lieut.-Colonel Thomas Astle, scarlet, green, white, gold; Loyal Layton, 100, Captain George Millett, scarlet, yellow, white, gold; Loyal Mersea Island, 67, Captain Bennett Hawes, scarlet, brown, blue; Middleton, 62, Captain S. T. Gillum, scarlet, brown, blue, gold; Loyal Ongar Hundred, 450, Lieut.-Colonel Jno. Wright, scarlet, yellow, white; Loyal Prittlewell, 53, Captain Jno. Lodwick, scarlet, brown, blue; Rayleigh, 67, Captain Rd. Goodman, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; Rochford, 96, Captain Jno. Barrington; Loyal Romford, 66, Captain Jno. Tyler, jun., scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; Roxwell, 66, Captain George Cheveley, scarlet, yellow, blue, gold; Saffron Walden, 160, Major Thos. Hall, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; St. Osyth, 134, Captain Fr. Nassau, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; Terling Riflemen, 24, Lieut. Thos. Wood, green, brown, green, brown; Thaxted, 83, Capt. Rt. Maitland, scarlet, blue, white, gold; Tollesbury, 57, Captain J. Bell; Wakering, 70, Captain Josh. Knapping, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; Waltham Abbey, 110, Captain Wm. Sotheby, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; Walthamstow, 195, Major Rt. Lee, scarlet, yellow, white, gold; Loyal Wanstead, 91, Captain Boyce Combe, scarlet, green, white; Witham Rifles, 88, Captain Jas. Miller, green, brown, green, brown; Writtle, 135, Captain J. R. Berkeley, scarlet, brown, yellow, gold; 1st Essex Legion, 1,323, Lieut.-Colonel Sir W. Hillary, Bart., scarlet, brown, blue and silver, with the cavalry detachment in blue, brown, blue and silver. The whole of the infantry of Essex, therefore, so far as known, were clad in the familiar scarlet of the Line, with the riflemen in green and the pioneers in blue.

Digitized by Google

EFFICIENCY IN TRAINING.

There were some who claimed much more than military service had accrued from the formation of the Volunteer Force, as witness the following: "The very manners of many have taken a more moral turn; public houses are deserted for drill; our churches are better frequented; profane swearing is banished, but every man looks to his character, respects the corps in which he is enrolled and is cautious in all he says or does lest he should disgrace the name of a British Volunteer." The terms of recognition and enlistment in 1803 were more strict than previously. These not withstanding, the number of corps rose to nearly fifty, including rifle companies at Witham and Terling and a company of pioneers at Dunmow. An artillery company was established at Newport, but in compiling the return the clerk in the office of the Clerk of the Peace was doubtful whether it was within the county boundaries, for he put a query mark against the town. The conditions of service included a promise to do duty in the military district in which the corps was situated, each company to be not less than two sergeants, two corporals, one drummer and 50 privates, with a captain, lieutenant and ensign; two lieutenants to be appointed to flank companies and such as consisted of 80 men, though no company was to be over 100 strong. A permanent sergeant was allowed for each company of not less than 60. In 1805 it was ordered that each corps was to be inspected once in every four months by a regular officer, or if such an inspection had not taken place that they would be willing to undergo it; otherwise, the members would not be entitled to exemption from the Militia ballot. These inspections were frequently held and notices were constantly inserted in the newspapers warning all ranks of the consequences of non-attendance. The training of Volunteers was more thorough than popularly supposed. Late in 1803 the Witham Volunteers marched into Colchester for the purpose of drilling with a famous regiment, the 95th Rifles, whilst early in 1804 there was a general offer to perform for 21 days' permanent duty, the idea being to brigade the companies. This proposal was accepted and a great deal of duty was efficiently performed in this way. For instance, the Writtle Company marched to Witham for 14 days' training; the Loyal Chelmsford Volunteers to Braintree and Bocking; the Loyal Colchester Volunteers to Lexden Heath; the Rochford Hundred Volunteers to Maldon. When in 1808 the Colchesters went on permanent duty at Sudbury they raised £12 on behalf of a volunteer who had his fingers shattered by the discharge of his firelock when in the act of loading with ball cartridge. Another example of their usefulness to the community occurred in September, 1798, when a press gang landed at Southend from the Nore in search of men supposed to be secreted there. Some of the sailors became intoxicated and by the manner in which they entered the houses roused the wrath

Digitized by Google

of the inhabitants. A serious affray ensued, in the course of which the Prittlewell Volunteers were called out. The ringleaders of the disorder were secured, but a boat's crew coming ashore to re-embark the press gang, they attempted to rescue their comrades and the trouble broke out again. Late in the evening the Rochford Volunteers were warned. They immediately marched to Southend and caused the press gang to retire, the prisoners being subsequently released. Towards the close of the same year an officer's servant was awarded 275 lashes for riding upon the footpath between Chelmsford and Springfield. When cautioned by the road surveyor he answered with abuse. He also forced several foot passengers off the path by driving them into the ditch. A Volunteer returning home from drill promptly advanced upon him with fixed bayonet and the troublesome soldier was taken into custody. For civilians the penalty for riding or driving on the footpaths was £5. A more extraordinary case was the trial before Mr. Justice Rooke, at Chelmsford, in 1805, of the action in which five defendants were sued by a Rayleigh innkeeper for damages. They ordered a dinner for 12 or 14 people, but only seven persons came. The party remained drinking until 10 p.m., when the account was called for. This was deemed exorbitant and they tried to induce the innkeeper to reduce it by one guinea. He refused to do so and they prevented him from leaving the room. The alarm being given, the populace rallied to the innkeeper. Some of the defendants escaped and ordered up a part of the Volunteer corps which was doing permanent duty in the neighbourhood. They came in military array and took one of the defendants from custody. The Judge asked three referees to assess what sum should be awarded and they fixed the amount at 300 guineas. The victory of Trafalgar was celebrated by all Volunteer corps giving a day's inspection pay to the Patriotic Fund at Lloyds, the Colchester men subscribing as much as £40. An amusing wager was that of Captain Bennet, of the Loyal Ongar Hundred Volunteers. He undertook to trundle a hoop from Whitechapel Church to Ongar, a distance of 22 miles, in 3½ hours for a bet of a thousand guineas. For a time he made good progress, but at the nineteenth mile he became exhausted through driving the hoop through heavy mud and gave up the attempt. He had then spent two hours 52 minutes in the effort and had 38 minutes within which to accomplish the remaining three miles.

In June, 1808, a great change came over the scene. The passage of the Local Militia Act created battalions of Local Militia, to which numbers of Volunteers were transferred, and, in consequence, though the Volunteer Force remained in being, there was a difficulty in maintaining interest. In October of that year Major T. Frost Gepp, of the Loyal Chelmsford Volunteers—who later became a Captain in the 2nd Bn. of the Essex Local Militia—ordered two parades, one of them for inspection by Lieut.-Colonel

Digitized by Google

Booth, and added : " The attendance of every person who means to continue a member of the corps will be absolutely necessary on the above days, as the officers have met and unanimously determined to send in their resignations unless the future musters shall be regularly and fully attended." There were 23 corps in existence in 1811, twelve of whom were cavalry, with a nominal roll of 2,512 men, of whom 2,066 were returned as efficients. In 1812 the War Office was anxious to know the methods employed to keep the arms in safe custody and most of the corps commandants reported that they were held by the men individually, though there were a few exceptions. At Writtle they were deposited in a brick-built chamber within the tower of the church ; at West Ham the surplus was lying in a loft in a brewhouse ; at Barking those not in use were kept in the workhouse and at St. Osyth a room over the gateway of the Priory was used. In March, 1813, the War Office issued instructions to the Lord Lieutenant that the Volunteer Infantry Corps should be released from their engagements after March 24th, as the establishment of the Local Militia precluded the necessity of continuing under present circumstances the services of the greater part of the force. In communicating this decision Lord Braybrooke added his testimony to "their zealous and meritorious exertions." There was immediate disbandment of many of the units, celebrated by a dinner and sometimes, as was the case at Witham, the commanding officer was presented with a piece of plate and carried shoulder high through the town.

LOCAL MILITIA FORMED.

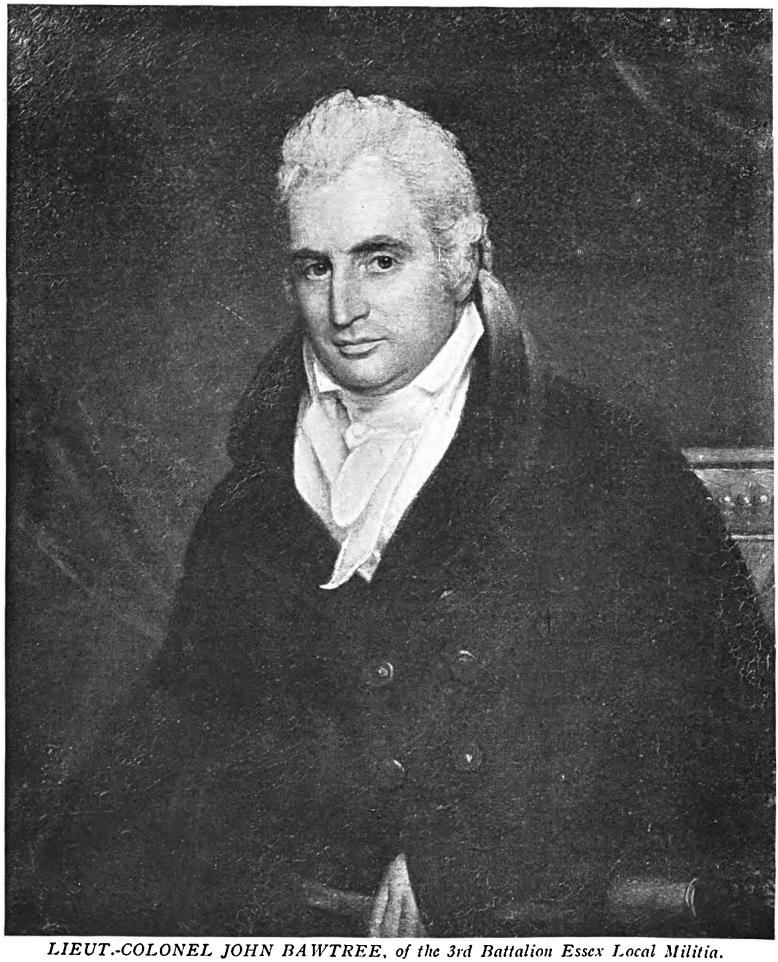
By the Local Militia Act Volunteers could transfer to the new corps and men could voluntarily enrol for four years, the deficiency to be made up by the ballot. The customary exemption was given from service in the Regular Militia. The new force could be called out for not more than 28 days' training to no greater distance than an adjoining county for two periods, in Spring and Autumn, and for not more than ten days during 1808. In case of invasion or rebellion it could be embodied and marched to any part of Great Britain. Trouble ensued in some counties, for the Volunteers refused to enrol, but in Essex there was apparently little difficulty in finding men for the five infantry battalions, which, in fact, were commanded and mainly officered from the Volunteers.

The men liable to service were those between 18 and 30 years of age, and the number of efficient Volunteers in the County was deducted from the total required to do service. The number was arrived at in this way. The original quota in Essex for the regular Militia was 1,244 men and the assessment for the Local Militia was fixed at six times that number, viz., 7,464. The Yeomanry and Volunteers totalled 2,963, of whom 1,713 were of statutory age. The latter alone were taken from the total and

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



LIEUT.-COLONEL JOHN BAWTREE, of the 3rd Battalion Essex Local Militia.

Digitized by Google

there was thus a deficiency of 5,751, but the aggregate establishment of the battalions was fixed at the lower figure of 5,171. The number of men in the county liable to serve was 13,150, of whom 3,566 were exempt, leaving 9,584 from whom the numbers required could be taken. The number eligible had not greatly declined by 1815, when men had been for some years volunteering in large numbers into the Regular Army, the total then being 12,724. Great efforts were made to recruit the new units by voluntary enlistment, but in the end there was a reluctant resort to the ballot, Essex having some legal difficulty in connection therewith owing to the ballot in at least one of the sub-divisions being held after the appointed day. At a meeting of the County Lieutenancy in March, 1809, Essex was divided into five recruiting areas, to each of which a battalion was allotted. The 1st Battalion, with an establishment of 1,153 men, was placed under the command of Colonel J. H. Strutt, and the men were to be drawn from the following Hundreds: Uttlesford, 263; Dunmow, 181; Lexden half Hundred, 229; Thurstable, 47; Witham, 118, and Rochford, 315. The 2nd Battalion had an establishment of 948 and was commanded by Lieut.-Colonel T. G. Bramston, being raised as follows: Chelmsford, 366; Barstable, 353; Chafford, 229. The 3rd Battalion, with an establishment of 1,019, was led by Lieut.-Colonel John Bawtree and recruited as under: Tendring, 447; Winstree, 87; Lexden half Hundred, 191; Colchester, 294. The 4th Battalion was designed to be 1,067 strong, with Lieut.-Colonel Thomas Astle in command, and raised in the following districts: Hinckford, 787; Freshwell, 144; Walden Town, 28; Clavering, 108. The 5th Battalion, of 984 men, was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John Hughes and composed as follows: Ongar, 261; Harlow, 183; Walthamstow half Hundred, 117; Becontree, 271; Havering Liberty, 152. There were subsequent minor alterations of the establishment. Headquarters of the respective battalions were: No. 1, Colchester; No. 2, Chelmsford; No. 3, Colchester; No. 4, Braintee; No. 5, Ongar. The numbers of private men apparently never quite reached the numbers laid down, for in 1811 the 1st Battalion recorded an attendance of 1,014; the 2nd Battalion, 946; the 3rd, Battalion, 985; the 4th Battalion, 965 and the 5th Battalion, 813.

The commanding officers were well-known Essex men. Lieut.-Colonel J. H. Strutt, of Terling Place, had raised the South Essex Supplementary Militia and was an officer of considerable experience. He married Lady Charlotte Fitzgerald, daughter of the Duke of Leinster, who was later created Baroness Rayleigh. Lieut.-Colonel T. G. Bramston, of Skreens, Roxwell, was later Member for Essex, as his father and great-grandfather before him had been. Lieut.-Colonel John Bawtree belonged to a well-known Colchester family.

Digitized by Google

Lieut.-Colonel Thomas Astle was Keeper of the Records in the Tower of London and a trustee of the British Museum, having married in 1765 Mary, daughter of Rev. Philip Morant, Rector of Oldham and St. Mary-at-the-Walls, Colchester, the leading Essex historian. Colonel Hughes resided at Marden Ash. The first and second battalions secured their precedence by reason of the seniority of their colonels as former commanding officers of the regular Militia. They do not appear to have been recruited to any considerable extent from existing Volunteer corps. In the case of the other three battalions the nucleus was comprised of men from the Colchester, Hinckford and Ongar Volunteer Battalions respectively and their readiness to serve was recognized by the appointment of their commanding officers to similar positions in the new units. Of the 525 rank and file of the Hinckford Battalion no fewer than 365 enrolled in the Local Militia. The question whether the facings should be green or yellow caused some amount of discussion before it was settled. Ultimately, at the request of the colonels of the battalions, the Lord Lieutenant, in April, 1809, approved green facings, with gold epaulettes for the officers, Lord Braybrooke, in doing so, stating, "I understand that the Government are very anxious that the clothing of the N.C.O's., drummers and privates shall be precisely that which is worn by the regular Militia." In May of 1809 the battalions assembled for training, the 1st at Colchester; the 2nd, in June, at Chelmsford; the 3rd, 809 strong, at Colchester; the 4th, at Braintree, when 1,003 men were present out of 1,009, and the 5th at Chelmsford. The 2nd Battalion were inspected by the Duke of Kent in Danbury Park and at the close of the training Colonel Bramston congratulated the battalion on its orderly and attentive conduct, not doubting "that the same disposition manifested in the future periods of exercises will quickly render the regiment an effective part of the national strength." In June, 1810, the 2nd Battalion received their colours at Chelmsford, and in October the 1st Battalion, on the Artillery Ground, Colchester. The Mayor of Colchester complimented Colonel Strutt on the conduct of the 1st Battalion in 1812, stating that during its period of training no complaint had been lodged against it. It was in 1812 that the establishment was reduced to 4,976 private men, as follows; 1st Battalion, 1,029; 2nd Battalion, 975; 3rd Battalion, 952; 4th Battalion, 1,034; 5th Battalion, 986. Whilst in the county town in 1813 the 5th Battalion had a dispute with the Royal Meath Militia, also quartered in the Old Barracks, which assumed serious dimensions. A party of the Essex, having quarrelled with the Irishmen, forced the latter into their enclosure. Smarting under the reverse, the men of Meath seized muskets and bayonets and demanded that the gates should be opened to permit them to renew the

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

MAJOR WILLIAM TUFNELL, of Langleys, Great Waltham, a well-known Troop Commander of Essex Yeomanry in the Napoleonic War.

Digitized by Google

contest. Detachments of the West Yorkshire and Royal Surrey Militia were immediately placed under arms, but the Irishmen began scaling the high paling which surrounded the barracks or breaking it down. Lieut.-Colonel Delap, of the Surreys, was active in the steps he took to prevent a spread of the disturbance and the commander of the garrison (Colonel Chamberlain, of the 24th Regiment) ordered up other troops, preventing a general outbreak. Some of the Meath men escaped and hurried towards Moulsham with fixed bayonets, but they were met by piquets with loaded muskets and forced to retire to their quarters. Prompt action and firm measures happily prevented any loss of life and order was quickly restored. In May, 1813, the 2nd Battalion was inspected by Major-General Acland and the officers of the 4th Battalion, it is interesting to note, gave £10 annually to the maintenance of the Braintree Free School. In 1814 an Act was passed which enabled the Local Militia to extend their period of service to 42 days, but it met with little response in Essex, though in the case of the 5th Battalion all the officers and the greater part of the non-commissioned officers declared their willingness to do the extra duty. Peace having been declared, the battalions were not embodied for training in the Spring of the year and were thanked by Parliament, in common with other corps, for their service during the War. In April, 1816, the Lord Lieutenant was notified that the establishment of officers was to be preserved and vacancies filled, but the men were only to be retained until they became entitled to their discharge and a few days later all arms were ordered to be returned to Ordnance at Chelmsford. The battalions were nominally in being in 1817, for the operation of the ballot was formally suspended, but for all practical purposes the Local Militia had ceased to exist.

CONDITIONS OF YEOMANRY SERVICE.

Let us turn once more to Essex cavalry units and in particular to the 2nd Troop of Yeomanry Cavalry, commanded by Captain William Tufnell, of Langleys, Great Waltham, for in the latter case the orderly book has been, happily, preserved and is now in possession of Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O. Extracts therefrom afford an insight into the work of a volunteer unit and are also important because Captain Tufnell's troop and some others remained in existence after the French War had concluded, becoming a regiment of Yeomanry Cavalry, and, therefore, the forerunners of the Yeomanry corps which were formed later. The troop was raised in February, 1798, and the following are the "Rules and Regulations agreed upon by the Gentlemen of Captain Tufnell's Troop of Yeomanry Cavalry":

(1) That every person shall attend at the time and place appointed or forfeit half a crown.

Digitized by Google

(2) That every person shall attend in the field properly dressed and in good order with his horse and accoutrements clean and bright or forfeit one shilling.

(3) That every person during the time of exercise keep a profound silence or forfeit one shilling.

(4) That in every charge no one is to endeavour to push his horse beyond the line or to get past another under the forfeiture of 5s., unless it appears that his horse was unmanageable, but to take great care to keep dressed and in the line.

(5) That half an hour shall be allowed (in article 1st).

(6) That every person shall appear in the field with his hair turned up or cropped close and in powder.

(7) That four of the members, with a President, shall determine and settle any dispute that may arise about any of the above mentioned forfeitures or any irregularity that may happen in the field.

These rules varied somewhat in different corps and an interesting comparison can be made of those of the Barstable and Chafford troop, adopted at Stifford, which ran :

(1) Every Volunteer engages to obey his officers appointed to the troop during the time of being under arms ; and, further, upon the word " Attention " being given by the Commanding Officer, each Volunteer engages not to talk in the ranks under the penalty of 6d. each for being so irregular, but the Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers of the troop, whose duty it is to attend to the different evolutions being properly performed, are not to be subject to this penalty.

(2) Each Volunteer shall attend on the muster days to be appointed and not being present at the time the roll shall be called over shall incur the penalty of 1s., and no excuse whatsoever shall be admitted.

(3) The officers' fines for non-attendance shall be as follows, viz., the Captain 5s., other officers 2s. 6d. each, the sergeant 2s. and the corporals 1s. 6d. each.

(4) No Volunteer, on the day of muster, shall go out of the Squadron after it is formed without permission of the Commanding Officer. After the Squadron shall have been formed and the ranks told off no Volunteer shall be admitted into the same, unless present at its formation, until after he shall have been drilled in a squad to be formed of negligent and inattentive members.

(5) When a field day shall be appointed each Volunteer who shall be absent shall be subject to, and pay, a fine of 5s., but if prevented by illness, then only to be liable to a common fine.

(6) The muster roll shall be called over every muster day within twenty minutes after the hour appointed for the meeting.

(7) Every Volunteer who shall have been absent more than one muster day shall, previous to his being admitted in the Squadron, be drilled in the squad formed under the last section of the fourth article.

Digitized by Google

Flags of II, III, IV and V Battalions, Essex Local Militia. The colour of the silk is green. These Flags hung for many years in the Shire Hall, Chelmsford, and were removed in 1926. The first three of them were deposited for safe custody in Chelmsford Cathedral and the fourth (Vth Bn.) in the Essex Regiment Chapel, Warley.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

(8) Every Volunteer who shall not appear with his accoutrements properly clean shall be placed in the irregular squad at the discretion of the Commanding Officer.

(9) Any gentleman who shall quit the troop without giving a sufficient reason to the Captain or Commanding Officer for the time being (who in that case is to be the sole judge), such person, so quitting as above, shall forfeit and pay to the Captain, or Commanding Officer, for the time being the sum of £3 3s. for the benefit of the troop.

In answer to an enquiry, dated March 20th, 1798, as to how far the members of the Chelmsford troop, in common with others, could be "depended upon in case of emergency," the War Office, through the Lord Lieutenant, were informed that the following resolutions had been agreed :—

(1) That in case the General Officer commanding the District should think necessary to order the Regular Forces from the interior part of the county to march to the sea coast to oppose the landing of an enemy and to attack them if landed, they will be ready to obey such orders that the Generals Commanding think proper to deliver to them and to march to any post or places they shall think proper to appoint for them within the County of Essex.

(2) That in case of an actual invasion taking place in any part of this district (comprehending the Counties of Essex, Norfolk, Lincoln, Suffolk, Hertfordshire, Cambridge and Huntingdon) they will be ready to march and assist in whatever military operations may be required of them.

Orders were accordingly issued from General Headquarters, Wivenhoe, by General Sir William Howe, on April 17th, "in the event of invasion or the immediate apprehension of it," placing Captain Tufnell's troop under Major-General Ross, who was stationed at Chelmsford. Two days later orders came from Brigade that the troop should hold itself in readiness to march to Chelmsford at the shortest warning.

The Lord Lieutenant was notified on April 5th, of the same year, that the Government were prepared to pay at the rate of £3 per annum for three years in respect of each person serving to provide funds to replace clothing and appointments which were wanting, and the 2nd Troop of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry were in the proud position to reply that such aid was not at present required, being informed thereupon by the War Office: "You may be assured that the troop will not be precluded by this communication from availing themselves at a future time of the benefit now offered by His Majesty's orders to the Yeomanry and Volunteer Cavalry." Other details are also interesting. The Government paid regular wages to a sergeant in each troop "in order to make good as far as possible its inability to furnish non-commissioned officers from the Regular Army." The officers received two days' pay, according to their rank, and the men two

Digitized by Google

shillings weekly on attending exercise for two days in the seven, the principle being that until called out for permanent duty they should be paid for each day upon which they were present at drill.

In May of 1798 it was noted that service in Captain Tufnell's troop was popular—" the greater part is so far advanced in the knowledge of the broad sword exercise as to be able to go through the six divisions." A month later they celebrated the King's birthday by a parade with the Chelmsford Volunteers opposite the " Black Boy " Inn. The cavalry went through their sword exercise, " highly to the gratification of a number of the spectators and with great credit to themselves," afterwards, with the infantry, saluting the Warwickshire, North Middlesex and Royal Bucks Militia on their return from Galleywood Common, where they had been reviewed by Major-General Ross. The feeling between horsemen and footmen was quite harmonious in Chelmsford, for later in the month Captain Tufnell supplied a buck for an infantry dinner at the " Black Boy," which was much appreciated.

HOW THE 1st ESSEX YEOMANRY CAVALRY CAME INTO BEING.

A return, dated September 1st, 1798, stated the strength of Captain Tufnell's troop as two officers, two sergeants, one trumpeter, one farrier and 45 rank and file, there being wanted to complete one cornet and seven rank and file There were three officers in April, 1799, one quartermaster, two sergeants, two corporals, one trumpeter and 46 privates. A month later Captain Tufnell was given permission to embody his troop on June 1st and march to Rochford. It was in 1799 that the troop first took a clothing allowance of £156, being £3 for each non-commissioned officer and private. There was a change of general command in January, 1800, General Howe, who had become Lord Howe, being succeeded by Lieut.-General Garth, with headquarters at Ipswich. General Garth quickly got to work and in October was enquiring when and where it would be convenient for him to inspect the Yeomanry. In these years, as in later equally critical times, the War Office were careful about details and it is, therefore, not surprising to find them in October, 1800, notifying that the ration of oats allowed to dragoon horses in barracks as well as in quarters was reduced to 7lb. during the winter months, viz., from October to February inclusive. Each member of the Yeomanry Cavalry was exempted from paying duty for one horse and Captain Tufnell was asked for a return of his troop by the Surveyor, " understanding that you are the commander of the corps in Chelmsford Hundred." Amidst several letters dealing with the preparation of returns is a War Office authority, of April, 1801, for the payment of £159 to the troop for clothing and appointments. The year 1801 brought a detailed plan for dealing with an invasion and the

Digitized by Google

West Essex Yeomanry Cavalry and Artillery in Action against the Herts Militia at Ware, June 11th, 1853.
From a Series of Lithographs by F. W. Woodhouse. Reproduced from the Original Work by kind permission of Messrs. Robson & Co., Ltd.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

part to be played by the Yeomanry has been already detailed.

When the Peace of Amiens came in 1802 George III expressed the "deep and lasting sense which he entertains of that loyalty, spirit and perseverance which has been manifested by the several corps of Yeomanry and Volunteers," and thanking them "for conduct which has contributed so essentially towards maintaining the public security and thus enabling His Majesty to bring the contest in which he has been engaged to an honourable and advantageous conclusion." The King closed with an expression of the hope that the Yeomanry and Volunteers would continue to hold themselves in readiness for immediate service and to be regularly trained and exercised as often as circumstances would effectively admit. This tribute was followed by a formal vote of thanks by the House of Commons.

The Secretary of State for War, in a letter to the Lords Lieutenant, dated in April, 1802, circulated to Essex units by Mr. J. O. Parker, jun., Clerk of General Meetings, made clear the desire of the Government that the Yeomanry and Volunteer Cavalry should remain in being, though the desire of any member to retire would not, in the circumstances, be held as indicating any abatement of zeal in the country's behalf. The letter went on: "Your Lordship can offer no better recommendation to them than to adhere to that line of conduct by which they have deservedly acquired the honourable distinction of being considered as not only providing a resource in cases of serious internal commotion and disorder, but as forming an essential part of the defence of the country against a foreign enemy in circumstances of extraordinary emergency." Captain Tufnell read the letter to the members of his troop and they agreed without dissent to continue their services so long as they were required. There was an inspection by Major-General Milne, who expressed himself very satisfied with the precision of the troop movements. At the same time, the troop under Captain Conyers assembled at Epping Place and also agreed to prolong their service, but suspended the offer until the nature of the duty required of them was ascertained. They subsequently agreed to serve. Tendring Hundred Volunteer Cavalry expressed the feeling that the crisis which led to their establishment had subsided and they were desirous of returning to the private stations from which they had been called, nevertheless promising to return if necessity compelled—and they did so when the war was renewed. The infantrymen handed in their arms and disbanded, though with reluctance. At many places in Essex the event was made a public occasion. For instance, the Volunteers of the Romford Association deposited their colours in the Chapel of St. Edward and near by was erected a marble tablet, upon which was inscribed: "To repress sedition and to strengthen the hands of the Government at a time of great difficulty and danger, the inhabitants of this

Digitized by Google

town (with His Majesty's consent and approbation) on the 3rd day of May, 1798, formed themselves into a Corps of Infantry. Having attained the object of their engagement, and peace being happily restored, they disbanded on the 5th day of May, 1802, and deposited their standard in this place. *Moribus antiquis stat Britannia.*"

In 1803, when war broke out again, there was an immediate rally and the thanks of the House of Commons were accorded for promptitude and zeal shown. There was a marked increase in the number of troops of cavalry in Essex. One troop, raised by Sir Montague Burgoyne, was quickly expanded into the Essex Union Legion. One of the units which this active gentleman offered to raise was, it is worthy of note, designed to be trained and used as mounted riflemen, Sir Montague stating he would have no difficulty in obtaining Yeomen who were sharpshooters. The consolidation of troops into a regiment of Yeomanry Cavalry was not effected until 1813, when a letter from the Secretary of State urged it was desirable separate corps should be formed into a regiment of not less than six troops and be liable to do twelve days' permanent duty.

The Government had decided in July, 1802, to pay the Yeomanry Cavalry, which continued in existence, £2 for each man for appointments and clothing and £60 to each troop with an establishment of not fewer than 40 rank and file "to be applied as the commanding officer shall judge proper to the service of the corps and to be in lieu of every other charge of whatsoever description heretofore defrayed by the Government." Upon the renewal of the war, however, the financial arrangements were again varied in June, 1803, £3 per annum being allowed for each effective man and £120 annually for each troop. This latter sum included the constant pay of sergeants and trumpeters or bugle men receiving remuneration either at a daily or weekly rate, men of these categories being attested and subject to military law until discharge. Each officer and man had to take the oath of allegiance and the troops consisted of not less than forty rank and file (corporals and privates). If the corps were embodied in case of invasion, riot or disturbance to serve either in or out of their county, the daily rates of pay of the regular cavalry were to apply, viz., sergeant-major, including 9d. for horse, 3s. 11d.; sergeant, 2s. 11d.; corporal, 2s. 4½d.; trumpeter, 2s. 4d., and private, 2s. Members were exempt from service in the Militia provided they attended at least five days' exercise annually, and that the corps to which they belonged was inspected at least once a year. They were also free of highway when proceeding to and from exercise, exempt from duty on the horse they used and also from the tax on hair powder. The wide area from which Major Tufnell recruited his troop is best illustrated by the numbers enrolled from each town or village and is an example of the difficulty which practically all troop leaders had of assembling their men for drill.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

LIEUT.-COLONEL J. ARCHER HOUBLON, M.P., who commanded the first Regiment of Yeomanry formed in Essex.

Digitized by Google

Of 73 names of non-commissioned officers and men borne upon the muster roll on July 26th, 1803, 23 came from Chelmsford, 15 from Great Waltham, five from Little Waltham, four from Felsted, three each from Boreham and High Easter, two each from Pleshey, Roxwell and Writtle, and one each from Great Baddow, Springfield, Broomfield, Chipping Ongar, Belchamp, Purleigh, Little Leighs, Great Leighs, Ulting, Battlesbridge, Stisted, Margaretting, Mashbury and Chigwell.

The annual training took place at Saffron Walden in May, 1804, in which year Brig.-General Slade, formerly of the Royal Dragoons, was appointed to the command of the corps of Yeomanry Cavalry in Essex, Cambridge and Huntingdon, with headquarters at Witham. For some years thereafter there is little of interest to record concerning the Yeomanry. When the news of the victory at Trafalgar came, the 1st Essex Squadron subscribed £39 12s. 6d. towards the Patriotic Fund at Lloyds, while in June, 1806, it was notified that the Commander-in-Chief had dispensed with the usual inspections during that month, though the reason is not stated. In 1809 Mr. H. J. Conyers succeeded Captain John Conyers, resigned, in command of the 1st Essex Squadron, and in 1811 Lieut.-Colonel Cotton, who inspected the men, expressed the opinion they were fit to act with any regular regiment of light dragoons and he should report the fact to the G.O.C. Eastern District.

In October, 1813, the Secretary of State for War suggested that independent troops should be formed into regiments. By January, 1814, the Lord Lieutenant was informed that the seven troops mentioned below were willing to act as one unit under the command of Lieut.-Colonel J. A. Houblon, of Hallingbury Place, and in February, 1814, the Prince Regent's approval was received of the seven troops forming one corps under the name of the 1st Essex Yeomanry Cavalry. In 1814 the return of effective strength showed that seven troops acted together, though there was some delay in obtaining authority to exercise the regiment from the Government, and 1817 was apparently the first year in which the troops of the Essex Yeomanry encamped as a single unit. Up to 1820 the returns to the Lord Lieutenant were made by the troop captains and not by Lieut.-Colonel J. Archer Houblon as commanding the regiment, and some troops then retained the distinctive titles which they had borne from the date of formation. The troops comprising the regiment, in the order given in the return of 1814, were: Captain Groves', 55; Captain Haselfoot's, 45; Captain Sparrow's, 32; Captain Tufnell's, 43; Captain Pollett's, 48; Captain Burleigh's, 48; Captain Asplin's, 25. This gave a total strength of 296 and 80 were reported as being needed to complete the establishment. Captain Joseph Groves, of Walbury, commanded a troop raised from Hallingbury, Sawbridgeworth and district, known as the 3rd troop, which

Digitized by Google

was originally led by Colonel Archer Houblon; Captain Haselfoot's troop was first described as the East Essex troop of Volunteer Cavalry, from Boreham, Danbury, Hatfield Peverel and the Woodhams, raised by Major Peter Wright, who became second-in-command of the Yeomanry regiment; Captain J. G. Sparrow's troop was originally termed the Halstead Volunteer Cavalry Association. Captain J. J. Tufnell's troop, the 2nd troop, was raised from Chelmsford and district by Captain William Tufnell, of Langleys, Great Waltham; Captain Pollett's troop was formed as the Freshwell Hundred Corps of Volunteer Cavalry; Captain William Burleigh's troop was previously called the Haverhill troop of Volunteer Cavalry; whilst the last, Captain Jonas Asplin's troop, was locally termed the Wakering Volunteer Cavalry and recruited mainly from the eastern portion of Rochford Hundred. The last-named was never strong and in 1816 had passed out of existence. In addition, there were the 1st Squadron (two troops) of Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, commanded by Captain H. J. Conyers, of Copped Hill, Epping; Colonel Burgoyne's Essex Union Legion Cavalry recruited from residents in Brentwood, Ingatestone and Shenfield; the Havering Yeomanry Cavalry, originally known as the Havering, Barstable and Chafford Cavalry, commanded by Major Crosse, of Rainham, raised from residents of Hornchurch, Billericay and district, and the 1st East Essex Cavalry, commanded by Captain Samuel Bawtree. Of these last-named the first three (Conyers, Burgoyne and Crosse) were in existence as late as 1820, for in that year they made returns to the Lord Lieutenant. When in 1814 the Government returned thanks to both Yeomanry and Volunteer Infantry, the Lord Lieutenant added the following personal note: "I must avail myself of this opportunity of congratulating your corps on the proud distinction they have so justly obtained; and to add my humble testimony to the zeal, public spirit and high discipline which I have had repeated opportunities of watching and approving during the long period of your services."

Napoleon's overthrow at Waterloo had assured the peace of Europe and naval and military establishments were promptly reduced. There was considerable civil unrest, however, and Yeomanry corps were kept in being. The troop leaders were instructed that they were at liberty to act independently of the Regiment should they be called upon to assist the civil power, but on no account were they to do so without the presence and under the authority of a magistrate. The reaction from a time of exhausting military activity caused interest in the Regiment gradually to decline. The annual training was held at Southend and adjacent villages in 1819, there being a muster of nearly 200 officers and men. In October, 1820, Lieut.-Colonel Archer Houblon warned his officers that "in the present disturbed state

Digitized by Google

of the public mind " there was a possibility of their active service being required and the oath of allegiance was administered to every man. The strength of the Regiment was maintained between 160 and 190 and in 1821 over 170 officers and men were wanted to complete. In 1822 the Yeomanry were not assembled for permanent duty and the following year Colonel Archer Houblon proposed they perform the eight days' permanent duty at Chelmsford at the end of June. Protest was made that the date would interfere with the ingathering of the hay and the training was postponed until after harvest, but on August 30th it was decided simply to have troop training, as in the year before. Owing to the backwardness of the season it was felt that the interval between harvest and seed-time would be short. The Regiment encamped at Southend from May 28th to June 4th, 1824, and the accounts therefor, in addition to disbursements for pay, include £21 3s. for 141 pints of wine and 10s. for the ringers at Prittlewell. It was during this training that certain of the Regiment narrowly escaped disaster. An excursion was made to the Nore lightship, but, unfortunately, the master got drunk and ran the vessel ashore upon the sands there. After much tribulation the party were rescued and brought to Sheerness, where they had to stay the night. By the end of 1824 there were 207 wanting to complete the establishment of 342 and in 1825 that number had risen to 219. Captain Tufnell's troop (38) was, as always, the strongest, but others sank to less than a score.

Correspondence ensued with the War Office relating to the strength of the Regiment and on May 5th, 1826, Colonel Archer Houblon wrote to Mr. Wm. Merry, from 10, Chandos Street, Cavendish Square:

" In reply to your letter of the 2nd inst., requesting to be informed whether in consequence of the present reduced state of the Regiment of Yeomanry I have the honor to command any troops composing the same have become extinct, I beg leave to acquaint you that up to the present period (with the exception of one troop, Captain Asplin's, who were disbanded ten years ago) they remain as heretofore, but that as some of them are particularly weak it is my intention (if not pointed out to me by the Secretary of War as exceptionable), with a view to present efficiency, to consolidate three of them into one or two, which, taking place, the Regiment will then consist of four or five troops instead of seven; at the same time I feel confident in observing that should any circumstances arise that may call forth the exertions of the Essex Yeomanry, I shall find very little difficulty in completing the two troops which by this arrangement will be temporarily done away with."

Colonel Archer Houblon wrote the following day to Viscount Maynard, as Lord Lieutenant of Essex, asking for permission to assemble the Yeomanry for annual training and also pointing out the critical position of affairs. He stated that he proposed

Digitized by Google

consolidating certain of the troops and added an observation which shows that there was diversity of uniform when the Regiment assembled, "Being originally distinct troops and wearing different dresses, I much wish for time to establish their uniformity as well as to endeavour by every means in my power to augment their numbers so as at least to establish the two troops that are now apparently extinct." Permission was ultimately obtained for the assembly at Saffron Walden on May 26th. The task of getting each troop to adopt a similar uniform was one of considerable delicacy and at the meeting of officers there was some dissension to the suggestion of the Colonel that the service dress worn by Captain Tufnell's troop should be adopted. Some of the protesters subsequently withdrew their objection, but the leader of another troop was urged to attend the annual training no matter what the particular uniform might be. The four troops retained were those of Captain Tufnell, Captain Groves, Captain Houblon and Captain Haselfoot. The next year Captains Houblon and Haselfoot had retired and the circular of May 19th, 1827, was addressed to Lieutenants Myall and Battyll. In that year the effective strength was 120 out of an establishment of 398. There was too keen a desire for economy in Government circles and in 1828 the Regiment was disbanded and with it the Tufnell troop after 34 years of honourable and loyal service. It was not until 1831, however, that the Adjutant, Mr. M. Allen, triumphantly settled with the War Office a lively argument with respect to deficiencies in arms and equipment.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

LIEUT.-COLONEL GEORGE PALMER, who raised the West Essex Yeomanry in 1830 and commanded the Regiment for many years.

Digitized by Google

THE WEST ESSEX YEOMANRY CAVALRY, 1830-1877.

Essex was not long without a regiment of Yeomanry Cavalry, and in the winter of 1830 Mr. George Palmer, jun., of Nazeing Park, whose father was Member of Parliament for South Essex, at the request of Lord Melbourne, raised a troop of Yeomanry, numbering between 80 and 90 of all ranks, with the object of protecting the Government works at Waltham Abbey and Enfield Lock, the country being in a ferment over the agitation for the Reform Bill. Mr. Palmer, who later became Lieut.-Colonel of the regiment known as the West Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, had seen previous service as a private in the London and Westminster Light Horse Volunteers from 1819 until their disbandment in 1829. The single troop rapidly expanded into a regiment of light cavalry. The uniform was blue, with scarlet facings of the Light Dragoon pattern, broad-topped shakos, with white horsehair plumes and blue overalls with scarlet stripes. In undress blue caps were worn, the officers' caps having drooping peaks. In 1838 the West Essex narrowly escaped extinction and were only saved by the generosity of Major Palmer. Lord John Russell, then Secretary of State for the Home Department, ordered the disbandment of the corps at that time, and the commanding officer met the situation by offering its gratuitous services to Queen Victoria, who had only recently ascended the throne. The proposal was accepted and for five years Major Palmer maintained the Regiment at his own charge. It was not until 1843 that it was restored to the establishment, probably in recognition of duty worthily performed in protecting the Waltham Abbey powder mills and Enfield Lock small arms factory during the Chartist agitation of 1839. The West Essex was carried on with varying success, but all difficulties were overcome by the pluck and determination of the commanding officer. At one time they boasted a black drummer, who had previously served with the Coldstream Guards. The headquarters were at Nazeing, Waltham Abbey, and the annual training was undergone at that place with rare exceptions.

Social amenities were by no means lacking and there is record of a most successful function in 1847. The members were ordered to parade at Harlow Bush House, dismounted, in full dress, with white overalls, but without side arms or chacos (shakos) in response to the following invitation : " The Committee of the West Essex Yeomanry Cavalry—being desirous of availing themselves of the buck presented to the corps by their Honorary

Digitized by Google

Member, Major Bayley, of Passmores—intend expending the amount of the fines in the hands of their Treasurer by having a military dinner at Harlow Bush on Monday, the 20th inst., at which the honour of your company is requested." Honorary members were also expected to attend, for an invitation to one of them from Major Palmer asked the honour of his company to "partake of old Major Bayley's venison and one pint of wine." In 1851 a demi battery of light artillery was attached to the Regiment, known as D troop, and proved a smart and popular branch of the service. This augmentation was largely effected through the personal recommendation of Sir Collingwood Dickson, K.C.B., then commandant of the works at Waltham Abbey, and by whose "exertions, aid and advice they were brought into a state of efficiency as artillerymen in a very short time." In June, 1853, the Regiment, of a strength of 220, was inspected on Wanstead Flats at the conclusion of its training, and there were then on parade three troops of cavalry and one of artillery, with band. "A" troop was commanded by Captain Jessopp, of Waltham Abbey; "B" troop by Captain Watlington, the men being mostly recruited from Harlow and district, and "C" troop by Captain the Hon. F. Petre, the personnel being mainly drawn from estates of Lord Petre. The artillery commander was Captain S. B. Edenborough, of Thrift Hall, Waltham Abbey. Major Pitt, Royal Horse Guards, the inspecting officer, at the close expressed his satisfaction with the work of both arms. Then, according to a Press report of the function, "The artillery went through a manœuvre not set down in the programme of the day, and which excited no little surprise amongst the spectators. A couple of rounds were fired rapidly and when the smoke cleared away, the guns were seen completely dismantled, the carriages having in the meantime been taken to pieces and scattered in all directions, while the men lay flat upon the grass. At the signal, however, they were up and performing sword exercise; and the guns having been put into fighting trim again as quickly as they had been taken to pieces, two rounds were fired as a finale to the proceedings of the day, the spectators testifying their satisfaction at the manœuvre with a hearty cheer." As was customary, lunch was served in a tent in Wanstead Park, at which there were 350 guests, the site being that formerly occupied by the stately Wanstead House.

Mr. John Bramston, who commanded the Chelmsford troop in the Fifties, had an unusual experience in 1854, for as a cornet he wore the old blue and silver uniform among 20,000 French troops. The Emperor, Napoleon III, gave a review in honour of Queen Victoria, then on a visit to Paris. Thinking it would be a sight worth seeing, Mr. Bramston hired a horse and in due course mixed with the throng at the saluting point. He was saluted by every French soldier he met and on his way through the lines was greeted with *Voila un Colonel Anglais*!

Digitized by Google

OFFICER OF WEST ESSEX YEOMANRY.
(From a Coloured Engraving).

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A detachment of the West Essex formed an escort for H.R.H. Prince Albert on April 21st, 1856, when he inspected the troops quartered at Colchester. No training was held in 1857, but it took place at Chelmsford in the following year. By 1859 the corps had expanded to five troops, two of which were artillery, and styled the "West Essex Yeomanry Artillery and Cavalry." The revival of the Volunteer movement, due to an alarm of French invasion, was some recompense to those who had striven under discouraging circumstances to keep the Yeomanry in being. Major Palmer took a great interest in forwarding the cause. On August 4th, 1860, the Regiment, with the Uxbridge Yeomanry Cavalry (later the Middlesex Imperial Yeomanry) and various London and Essex Volunteer Corps, was reviewed at Hylands Park by Major-General Wood, of Colchester. On October 13th of the same year the West Essex and some 1,500 Volunteer Infantry were invited to take part in a review and sham fight on Nazeing Common, near Broxbourne, but owing to bad weather the numbers present did not reach anticipations.

Upon the reorganization of the Yeomanry regiments in 1871 the establishment of the West Essex, then known as the Essex Yeomanry Cavalry, was fixed at one lieut.-colonel, one major, five captains, five lieutenants, three sub-lieutenants, one surgeon, one adjutant and 230 N.C.O's. and men, making a total of 247 of all ranks. The uniform was then of the Hussar type, consisting of a blue jacket, with five bars of white lace, scarlet collar and cuffs, blue overalls, with scarlet stripe, and a busby, with scarlet bag and a scarlet and white plume, the lace of the officers being silver. Orders were given in 1871 for members of "A" and "B" troops to attend drills at Epping Old Mill (Epping Toll Bar), on the road from the "Wake Arms," Epping, and at Waltham Abbey, "C" troop assembling at Navestock. Lieut.-Colonel Palmer retired in 1868 and was succeeded by Lieut-Colonel R. W. Hamilton. His tenure was brief, for he handed over in September, 1870, to Lieut-Colonel S. Bolton Edenborough. The command devolved, in February, 1874, upon Lieut.-Colonel John Glas Sandeman. He was gazetted to the Regiment as a major in 1870, upon retirement as captain from the 1st Royal Dragoons. With the latter he served in the Crimean War, taking part, as a cornet, at the age of eighteen, in the charge of the Heavy Cavalry Brigade at Balaklava. Colonel Sandeman resigned in June, 1875, and later became sub-officer of the Honourable Corps of Gentlemen-at-Arms. He lived for many years at Hayling Island and died in 1921 at the age of 86. During his short period of command the Colonel issued a spirited appeal for recruits in which he stated that the pay for N.C.O.'s and men during the period of permanent duty was 7s. per day and added: "A free kit, consisting of a handsome uniform, is given and arms and saddlery are provided free of cost to the Yeoman, who is only required to

Digitized by Google

find a horse for drills and for the annual training, which this year will take place at the county town of Chelmsford, from the 12th to the 19th September."

In January, 1876, the War Office ordered the disbandment of the two artillery troops ("D" and "E"), because of the decision that "the functions of the Yeomanry Cavalry should be exclusively directed to the proper duties of light cavalry," the discontinuance of artillery and unmounted troops being recommended as not forming part of the establishment of a cavalry regiment of modern times. Accordingly, the members of the field battery, to the number of 80, were assembled in the Engineers' Yard of the Waltham Abbey Factory, to be informed of the decision by the commanding officer, Major F. Duff Cater. The latter expressed his keen regret at the parting. "By your attention to drill and instruction, you have always been a pattern to the rest of the Regiment and have elicited from the inspecting officers the very highest praise, and from the higher authorities the most favourable report for your efficiency and good conduct." Three cheers were given for the Queen. Major Duff Cater handed £5 to the Sergeant-Major to be expended in a parting glass and the last act of the members was to make a collection on behalf of a comrade confined to bed through sickness.

The nominal establishment of the Regiment thereafter was four troops, but popular interest in it was most disappointing. At the annual inspection in 1876 there were only 46 men on parade and in September Lieut.-Colonel Duff Cater was ordered to disband the Regiment at the close of the military year. The commanding officer sought to avert the dismissal by a meeting of the members and of representatives of the chief families in the county, pointing out there were still 155 names on the roll and if the fourth troop could be raised the Regiment might be saved. The effort failed, however, and on March 31st, 1877, the Essex Yeomanry disappeared from the Army List after 47 years of service. Essex soon had association with the Yeomanry again, for in 1889 Mr. R. B. Colvin, when Master of the East Essex Hounds, raised a troop of the Loyal Suffolk Hussars, of which he was an officer. So persistent is military tradition and the interest which is excited thereby, that among the warmest supporters of the Regiment raised in 1901 were former members of the West Essex Yeomanry Cavalry.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

BRIG.-GENERAL R. B. COLVIN, C.B., who raised the Essex Yeomanry, first known as the Essex Imperial Yeomanry, and commanded the Regiment from 1902 to 1910.

Digitized by Google

FORMATION OF THE ESSEX IMPERIAL YEOMANRY.

Public feeling had been keenly aroused when the Government in 1901 decided to raise more Yeomanry regiments for purposes of national defence. The country was still engaged in the South African War, where success was being achieved mainly by the use of mobile columns. The gallant and prolonged resistance of the Boers was due in great measure to their fine shooting and intimate knowledge of the country and the feeling was that in case of invasion well-trained cavalry regiments, with all ranks knowing every by-way, hedge and ditch in the countryside, would prove a formidable obstacle to hostile effort. The Earl of Warwick, shortly after his appointment as Lord Lieutenant of Essex, offered to raise a regiment of Imperial Yeomanry and in November, 1901, the War Office granted him authority so to do. In a letter dated November 23rd, from Warwick Castle, he invited the support of the county, his Lordship expressing his "earnest belief that the County of Essex will respond in a manner worthy of its past traditions of loyalty and patriotism." Assistance, it was urged, could be given in various ways—by personal service, by the loan of horses, by inducements offered to tenant farmers to join and by employers of labour giving generous allowance of time to their employees to promote efficiency. The success of the appeal was instantaneous; within a month 350 had been attested. At the annual training in May, 1902, 550 officers and men were present, all mounted, armed and equipped. In the orders of January 30th, 1903, it was announced that the Regiment was complete in numbers; "it only remains for every member to continue as he has begun to make it thoroughly efficient." An interesting link with the West Essex Yeomanry was the Quartermaster, Captain W. Brown, who had served two years in the latter unit. Upon its disbandment he joined the Loyal Suffolk Hussars and became Quartermaster-Sergeant, which rank he held until promoted to the Essex Yeomanry. Association with the old West Essex Yeomanry was strengthened by the enlistment of the whole of the members of the Waltham Abbey Town Band, which was formerly the band of the disbanded Yeomanry regiment and which continued to wear the uniform. The spirit of the times, aided by the enthusiastic support of the Press, had much to do with the prompt enrolment of the Regiment, but much was also due to Lieut.-Colonel (now Brig.-Gen.) R. B. Colvin, C.B., of Monkhams, Waltham Abbey, who had been appointed to the command. He was well-known to Essex men, particularly in hunting circles, and the decision to recruit the four squadrons from the four Hunts

Digitized by Google

by which the county was served was wise and sound. He not only secured by this means equitable territorial divisions, but he appealed with great force to the best type of men as recruits for the Regiment. Colonel Colvin had been a life-long lover of fox-hunting. Soon after leaving Cambridge University, where he was President of the Third Trinity Boat Club and rowed stroke in his College Eight and Four, he hunted the Essex Border Beagles, and then, living at Felix Hall, Kelvedon, became Master of the East Essex Hounds for five years. In 1890 he accepted the Mastership of the Essex and Suffolk, living at The Kennels, Stratford St. Mary, and for three years hunted them with great success. His military service, too, had brought him distinction. He was transferred to the West Essex Militia in 1879 and ten years later transferred to the Loyal Suffolk Hussars, in which regiment he became Major and Honorary Lieut.-Colonel. At a recruiting meeting at Colchester, in the early part of 1902, Colonel Colvin recalled his first visit to the Essex military town with the Hussars, then very weak in numbers, only one hundred men mustering. General Drury Lowe, when he came to inspect them, said very little—their fate was in the balance, but happily the Hussars and the Colonel were able to continue their valuable voluntary work, for sterner service was before the Yeomen of England ere the decade had run its course. The South African War brought Colonel Colvin his opportunity and he seized it. Employed in training some of the first battalions of Yeomen despatched overseas, he subsequently became D.A.A.G. to that branch of the forces at the War Office. In due course he was appointed to the command of the 20th Battalion Imperial Yeomanry (Roughriders), whom he took to South Africa, being the first non-regular officer to command a regiment on active service in that war. After serving on the staff of General (later Earl) French, he was appointed commandant of the great camp at Norval's Pont, Cape Colony, and upon his return to England his services were recognized by a Companionship of the Bath (Military Division). As a soldier and hunter, and blessed with temperament and sound judgment, Colonel Colvin was warmly seconded in his efforts and as a result he secured some of the finest material in the county and was able to mould it into a highly efficient regiment, inspiring it with that spirit of endeavour and endurance which earned for it later an honourable reputation. The squadrons were organized as follow: "A" (Essex and Suffolk Hunt); headquarters, Colchester. "B" (East Essex Hunt); headquarters, Braintree. "C" (Essex Hunt); headquarters, Epping. "D" (Essex Union Hunt); headquarters, Southend. There was some disappointment that Chelmsford, as the county town, was not selected as the headquarters of one squadron and in later years the headquarters of "B" squadron

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

were transferred from Braintree to Chelmsford. Colonel Colvin, who had Major D. J. Gaisford, of Colchester, as second-in-command was singularly fortunate in his selection of squadron leaders. Major H. J. Lermitte, of "A" Squadron, resided at Colchester. He had seen hard fighting, being with the Mounted Infantry at Laing's Nek and Ingogo in the Boer War of 1881 and mentioned in despatches, whilst as a company commander in the Royal Scots Fusiliers he had exciting experiences when operating against Dacoits in Burmah. At Laing's Nek the Major had a horse shot under him and so lost a pair of field glasses which were attached to his saddle. Twenty years after, during the second Boer War, an officer of the Essex Yeomanry then serving picked up a pair of glasses dropped by a Boer whom he was pursuing. He found Major Lermitte's name on them and to that officer he had the pleasure of restoring them on his return home. Major E. Deacon, of "B" Squadron, lived at Sloe House, Halstead, and was Master of the Essex Foxhounds, having been also adjutant in the King's Dragoon Guards. Major L. Pelly, of "C" Squadron, had his residence at Bowes, Ongar, and had served with credit under Colonel Colvin in the 20th Battalion. Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore, of "D" Squadron, lived at Orsett Hall, Orsett, and had held a commission in the Essex Artillery Volunteers. He came of a family of well-known soldiers and soon achieved a reputation in the regiment, which was enhanced when he commanded the Essex Yeomen and afterwards the 10th Royal Hussars during stormy days in France. The Adjutant, Major J. H. Patterson, D.S.O., had served in Egypt and India, and was also in the 20th Battalion in South Africa. He was three times mentioned in despatches, having beside a reputation as a hunter of big game in Uganda.

The full dress uniform included a dark green dress frock, with red facings; the field service uniform was of green serge, with dark green cap, Bedford cord breeches, gaiters and brown ankle boots, tan gloves, puttees, jack spurs, overalls, Wellington boots and spurs, whilst the working dress was of khaki, with green facings. The first full dress headpiece was a colonial slouch felt hat, turned up on one side, with a small green and red plume. This was soon discarded and the green cap and tunic were then worn in full dress, followed by the dragoon helmets in 1912, with red horsehair plume. When the helmet was introduced white gauntlets were also worn. The badge was the Essex county arms surmounted by an imperial crown, and the motto *Audacter et sincere.* The motto was afterwards changed to *Decus et tutamen,* this being the original watchword of the Regiment. Enlistment was for a period of three years for home defence. The annual training lasted fourteen days and each trooper then received 5s. 6d. per day, with 1s. 6d. allowance for horse forage. Horses were provided free by the

Digitized by Google

Government or an allowance of £5 was made if the member brought his own mount. Uniform, arms, saddlery and accoutrements were issued free.

ANNUAL TRAININGS.

The first training was in May, 1902, at Middlewick, Colchester, and the the excellent spirit of the men was proof against the heavy rain. A pair of kettle drums was then presented to the Regiment by the Hon. Colonel, the Earl of Warwick. Drum banners and a massive silver inkstand and cigarette box were given at the same time by Lady Greville on behalf of the ladies of Essex. The following year the Regiment mustered at the same training place, nearly 500 of all ranks attending out of a total strength of 543. Field-Marshal Lord Grenfell, commanding the IVth Army Corps, inspected the Yeomen on May 26th and congratulated them upon the splendid appearance both of officers and men. An extract from the orders of the Major-General commanding Eastern District (Major-General Sir W. Gatacre, K.C.B., D.S.O.), issued later, stated that Lord Grenfell "considers the Essex Imperial Yeomanry reflected great credit on their commanding officer, considering that the Regiment has only been in existence two years; they are well up in numbers, their horses are of good stamp and they ride well." An extensive operation was planned for the final days of training, Essex Yeomanry, with the 1st Suffolks and 2nd Norfolks, holding an outpost line from Nayland to Stratford St. Mary and Dedham against an advance guard of an invading army comprising the 5th Royal Irish Lancers and the Norfolk and Northamptonshire Militia Brigade. The supervising officer was Colonel E. H. H. Allenby, C.B., of the 5th Royal Irish Lancers, later to achieve renown as the commander of the Cavalry Corps in France in 1914, and as the conqueror of Palestine in 1917-18. Whilst stationed at Colchester Colonel Allenby took a close personal interest in the Yeomanry and his advice and assistance were very much appreciated by all ranks. During this annual training it was announced that Colonel Colvin had received, on behalf of the Regiment, a relic of the West Essex Yeomanry, being the banner of the Nazeing and Waltham Abbey troop. It consists of crimson silk, having in the centre the insignia of the Star and Garter, surmounted by the royal crown, with the motto *Decus et tutamen.*

When the annual training came round in 1904 Major Lermitte had become second-in-command, and Lieut.-Colonel J. H. Patterson, who had been adjutant of the Regiment for a short time upon formation, was leader of "A" Squadron. There was a spirited operation against the Suffolk Imperial Yeomanry, who were billeted in and around Sudbury. At the close of the training the inspecting officer was again Colonel Allenby, and the exercise which he witnessed took a practical form, being designed to test

Digitized by Google

NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

THE COUNTESS OF WARWICK after distributing the Prizes at Easton Lodge, 1905. Lieut.-Colonel and Mrs. Deacon on the left of the Photograph.

Digitized by Google

the efficiency of the Regiment in outpost and reconnaissance. He was warm in his praise of the work, saying the men rode well, got on and off their horses quicker than they did the previous year and also moved into action much more speedily. The Essex Yeomanry then numbered 563 of all ranks, but the establishment was later reduced to 476 by War Office order. A notable feature of the year was the fact that a composite squadron of Essex Yeomanry, under Major E. Deacon, served with the cavalry of the troops commanded by Major-General A. S. Wynne and operated against Sir John French's "striking force" from Aldershot, which landed at Clacton in September of 1904. The desire was to obtain information as to the time likely to be occupied in the disembarkation of an invading army, but although Sir John French accomplished his landing, the time taken in so doing was a day and a half instead of 17 hours, as arranged, owing to the roughness of the sea. The invaders reached Witham and Braintree, but were compelled to retire to Clacton, where they re-embarked after a week's hard fight against General Wynne's Red Force. Colonel (later Lord) Allenby, who commanded the Cavalry Brigade of the defending force during these manœuvres, was keenly appreciative of the work of the Essex Yeomen, for he wrote to Colonel Colvin: "Their cheerfulness, willingness and efficiency left nothing to be desired and their services were invaluable. I told Deacon how much I was indebted to them and him." The other officers serving with Major Deacon's squadron were Major Whitmore, Captain Hilder, Lieut. Squirl Dawson, 2nd Lieut. A. Buxton and Captain and Quartermaster Brown, while Colonel Colvin was employed on General Wynne's intelligence staff, 2nd Lieut. E. A. Ruggles-Brise was galloper to Colonel Allenby and Lieut. Roddick was attached to the 5th Lancers. The Southend troop, this year, formed a mounted pushball team, which had the distinction of being the only team in England at the time except that of the Royal Horse Guards. In November it was announced that the Regiment had completed three years of its existence. In consequence of time-expired men being unable to re-engage a successful appeal was made for 100 recruits to complete the establishment of 476 of all ranks.

May, 1905, brought a change of scene for the annual embodiment. This time the grounds of Easton Lodge, near Dunmow, were selected, consequent upon a cordial invitation from the Earl and Countess of Warwick. The Regiment—404 present out of a total strength of 438 of all ranks—in its new field service dress of khaki, with red facings, presented a smart appearance, on parade. The chief visitor was Field-Marshal Lord Methuen, who, after witnessing a field exercise, expressed his satisfaction at the intelligence and ability displayed. Colonel T. C. de Crespigny, chief staff officer of Yeomanry, was also more than

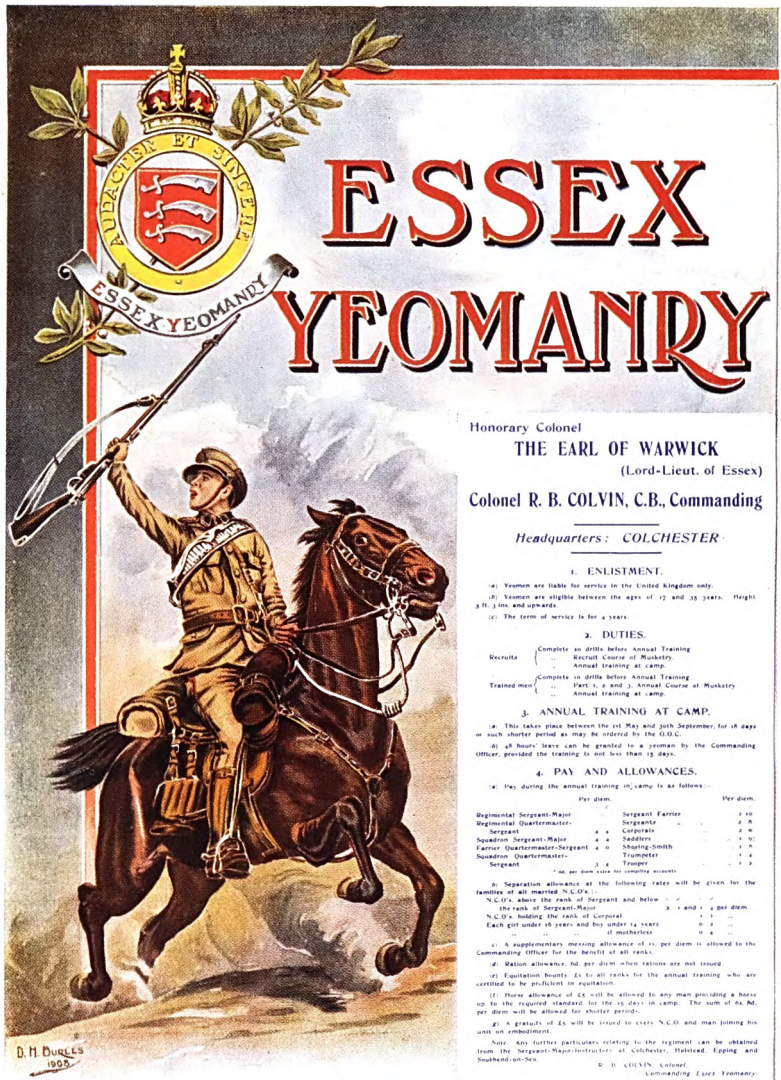
Digitized by Google

satisfied with the general efficiency and horsemanship, whilst the Southend troop of "D" Squadron had the privilege of a generous compliment from Field-Marshal Sir Evelyn Wood. He had been watching an attack by two squadrons upon the camping ground, which was resisted by "D" Squadron. At its conclusion the veteran soldier rode up to the instructing officer of the Southend troop and said he had never seen that particular class of work done better, either by regular or auxiliary forces. The men had taken cover scientifically and had not spent a single shot except when the enemy exposed themselves. In 1906 the annual training was at Clacton, on the grassy slopes to the west of the town. The Regiment was at full strength, 476, and had 430 of all ranks in camp. A welcome was given to the new Adjutant, Captain F. Colvin Watson, of the 7th Dragoon Guards, who during the next four years won first place in the affections of the Regiment for his skill and ever ready and tactful desire to be of service. A novel test of scoutcraft was designed. A political prisoner, impersonated by Major Pelly, was escorted by a squadron of the 16th Lancers whose object was to secure his escape by sea. To effect their purpose, the Lancers had to penetrate a line from Nether Hall, Bradfield, to St. Osyth held by the Essex Yeomanry. Three troops of Lancers were located, one of which delivered a spirited attack whilst an apparently innocent furniture van, within which Major Pelly was concealed, rumbled slowly along. The ruse might have succeeded had not a picket of "D" Squadron, commanded by Sergeant Morgan, insisted upon searching the van and seizing the half-stifled Major. Lord Methuen was again exceedingly satisfied with the outpost work, as he was the following year, when the Regiment was embodied at North Weald, Epping, at practically full strength. Some feeling was caused by the refusal of the Nazeing Common trustees, by a small majority, to allow the Regiment to use their ground for manœuvring purposes, the decision being the more inexplicable because the Common was the old training ground of the West Essex Yeomanry. The City of London Corporation, however, readily granted permission to use Epping Forest and in every other way the Yeomen met the ready courtesy which had welcomed them wherever they went. The scouting improved rapidly under the instruction of Lieut.-Colonel C. D. Bruce, who, to the regret of all, took leave of the Regiment in 1907 upon appointment as Captain Superintendent of Police at Shanghai. The Yeomen were back at Middlewick, Colchester, in 1908, when Lieut.-Colonel Sir A. Paget, Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, expressed himself as satisfied with all he saw, particularly remarking upon the excellent material of which the Regiment was composed, young, active men. This was a trying period for recruiting, for in 1908 the reorganization of the auxiliary forces had been

Digitized by Google

PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



Recruiting Poster, designed by Captain D. H. Burles, which was issued in 1908, when the Regiment became part of the new Territorial Force.

Digitized by Google

completed by Mr. (later Viscount) Haldane, Secretary of State for War, whereby the terms of enlistment had been strengthened and obligations increased, although the liability to service was still restricted to home defence. The word "Imperial" was dropped from the title and the Regiment became simply "The Essex Yeomanry." Colonel Colvin's tenure of command was specially extended for a couple of years and under his shrewd guidance the unit was successfully recruited afresh, wanting only 31 to complete at the end of December. The Norfolk, Suffolk and Essex Yeomanry were constituted the Eastern Mounted Brigade, commanded by Colonel Burn Murdoch, C.B. It had been decided that the Essex unit, with the Suffolk and Bedfordshire Yeomanry, should train at Churn, Berkshire, but at the last moment the water supply was deemed insufficient for the requirements of three regiments. The Essex Yeomanry accordingly trained at Colchester. Lieut.-Colonel Lermitte completed seven years of service in November, 1908, and was succeeded as second-in-command by Major E. Deacon. To mark their esteem, the officers presented to the retiring officer a silver inkstand in the form of a pair of kettle drums. There were changes in squadron leaders. Captain G. G. Gold, of Bocking Place, Braintree, went to "A" Squadron, vice Lieut.-Colonel J. H. Patterson, who had been seconded on accepting the post of Chief Game Ranger in East Africa. Major H. L. M. Tritton, of Lyons Hall, Great Leighs, took over "B" Squadron from Major Deacon, and Major W. S. Gosling, of Lovell's Court, Marnhull, Dorset, who had served in the Scots Guards, succeeded to "C" Squadron. Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore retained the leadership of "D" Squadron.

In 1909 the Regiment trained at the People's Park, Sudbury, having a very pleasant time, and being again inspected by General Paget. There were 467 of all ranks in camp out of a personnel of 474.

FIRST USE OF MOTOR TRANSPORT.

The last week of training was spent on trek and was notable for the employment, for the first time, of motor transport. The Regiment marched across Suffolk, fought a battle with the Suffolk Yeomanry at Blythburgh and returned to Sudbury in four days, having covered from 100 to 150 miles. The Suffolks represented an enemy which had landed at Lowestoft and occupied a position from Halesworth to Blythburgh. The Essex Yeomanry, representing the cavalry of the defenders, were ordered to clear up the situation, with definite instructions to seize the crossings of the River Blyth. At Saxmundham the Regiment was joined by four motor 'buses and a motor lorry, the last-named mounting a machine gun. The intervention of mechanical power was decisive in the subsequent stages of the operation. Its appearance upon manœuvres was consequent upon the desire of Mr. Clarkson, of Chelmsford, managing director of the National

Digitized by Google

Steam Car Company, to test his cars. He approached Colonel Colvin on the subject and as his offer coincided with the scheme which had been arranged with the Suffolk Yeomanry, it was cordially accepted. Two officers' patrols reconnoitred the Blyth crossings and Captain A. Buxton discovered an unfrequented ford west of Blythburgh, which he crossed the next morning with his patrol. A commanding position was occupied, from which the Essex Yeomanry were able to capture an enemy patrol. Support was promptly given by "A" and "C" Squadrons, who were rushed up in motor 'buses, and so surprised the weakly-held bridge at Blythburgh. At the close of the operation "A" Squadron was across the Blyth, "C" Squadron at Blythburgh and "B" Squadron (in reserve) at the latter place, ready to proceed to Wangford. "D" Squadron was engaging the enemy's right at Haleworth. The victory was complete, for the Suffolks were too scattered to concentrate. Upon the return journey the motor cars relieved the A.S.C. by carrying the baggage.

Lady Gwendoline Colvin, wife of the commanding officer, presented during the year a guidon, the design of which was approved by Heralds College. It was of red with a gold border and a lion was mounted at the top of the staff. In the centre were the Essex arms, with the words, "Essex Yeomanry," encircled by a laurel wreath and surmounted by a crown. The motto was *Decus et tutamen.* The guidon was presented to the Regiment by the King upon the East Lawn of Windsor Castle, on June 19th, 1909, on the occasion of a presentation of guidons and colours to units of the Territorial Force, a detachment of five officers and 19 other ranks from the Essex Yeomanry, under Major Whitmore, attending for that purpose.

In this year R.S.M. Silwood retired and was presented with £100 as a parting gift from the Regiment. He was appointed a gamekeeper in Epping Forest, but a few weeks later was found dead in a ditch, having presumably accidentally fallen over a tree. A subscription raised in aid of the wife and family realized £500.

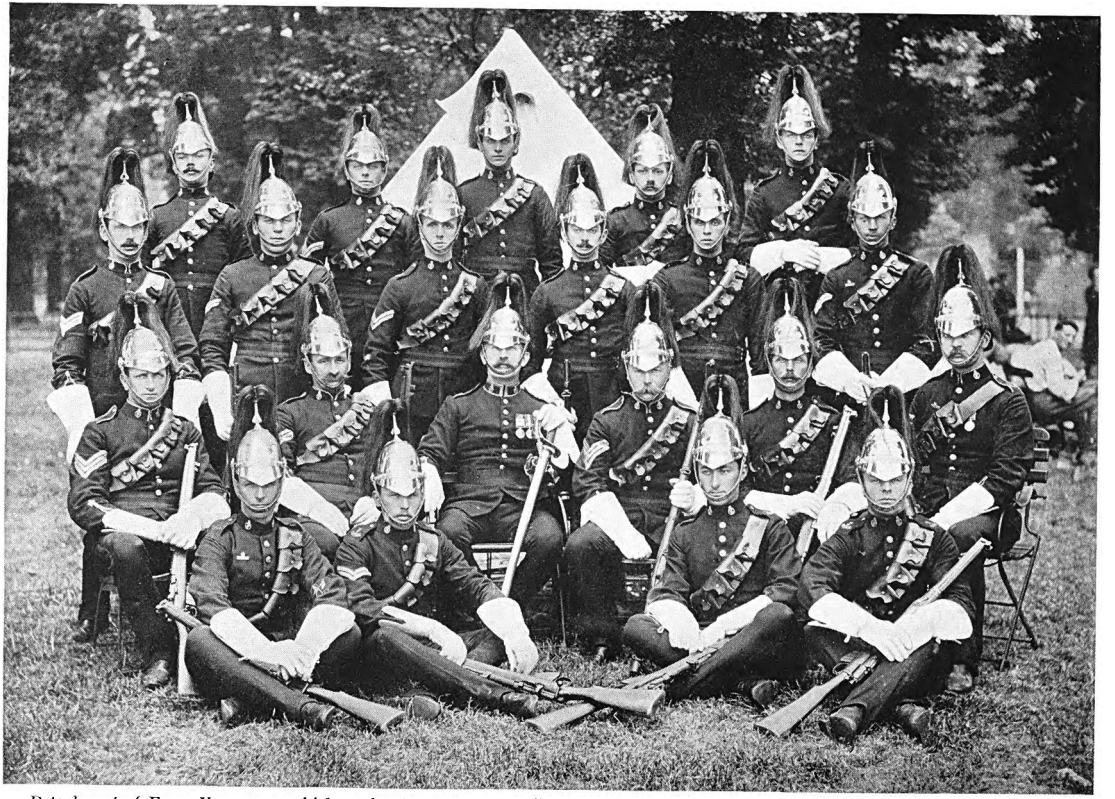
COLONEL COLVIN'S FAREWELL.

Colonel Colvin commanded the Regiment for the last time at the training of 1910, the camp being formed in Mr. W. Long's park at Saxmundham, Suffolk. The chief feature of the training was an extensive manœuvre in which all arms were employed, and which ended in the neighbourhood of Felixstowe. An amusing incident occurred at Bewdsey Ferry, where a squadron of Essex Yeomanry was sent to watch the crossing and create a diversion. Arrived at this spot, some thirty Yeomen seized a barge and drifted down the river towards the enemy's shore. Had they effected a landing and seized the hostile quick-firing gun, the manœuvres would have abruptly ended, so to prevent this untoward result an umpire unkindly ruled all craft on the River Deben

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



Detachment of Essex Yeomanry, which, under Capt. Eustace Hill, assisted to line the route in London along which King George's Coronation Procession passed.

Digitized by Google

were out of action. In an order, dated August 5th, Col. Colvin wrote: "The Commanding Officer, in issuing his final orders for the training of 1910, wishes to record his deep appreciation of the discipline and zeal displayed by all ranks, not only during the training, but during the whole period of his command. The Essex Yeomanry have succeeded in establishing a reputation of the highest order, which doubtless will be maintained and possibly increased in future years, but the Commanding Officer would impress upon all ranks the necessity of attending the preliminary drills in order to obtain this result. It is with feelings of the deepest regret that the Commanding Officer bids farewell to the Regiment with whose origin and existence he has been so closely connected, but is consoled to some extent by knowing that the command will pass into most capable hands." In recognition of his valuable services in raising the Essex Yeomanry Colonel Colvin received the Companionship of the Bath (Civil Division) and in due course the members of the Regiment expressed their appreciation in tangible form—the officers presenting him with a silver statuette of an Essex Yeoman, mounted, at the regimental dinner in 1911, and the other ranks, through S.S.M. Burles, with a silver cigar and cigarette casket. The Colonel was regarded as the personal friend of everyone who had served under him in the Essex Yeomanry and his energy, efficiency, industry, tact and kindliness were affectionately recalled. It is worthy of remark that in the records of the Regiment, which Colonel Colvin kept, he penned the following farewell, the significance of which will be appreciated in the knowledge of the national trial that followed. It was dated at Monkhams, April, 1911, and ran: "My task is finished and as I glance back through the records of the last nine years I wonder if those who have shared with me in the labours and pleasures of the Regiment may ever chance to scan these lines. It is but a short history and its continuance in this strenuous age may not be considered necessary—the peace narrative of a Yeomanry regiment. I plead, however, that for the past ten years the Essex Yeomanry has been my absorbing interest and I bequeath the epitome to my successor for continuance as he may think fit, but with a hope that it may occasionally refresh the memory of, and recall the past to, my old comrades."

Lieutenant-Colonel E. Deacon succeeded to the command of the Regiment in February, 1911, at which time the squadron leaders were: "A," Colchester, Captain Guy Gold; "B," Chelmsford, Major A. Roddick; "C," Waltham Abbey, Major W. S. Gosling; "D," Southend, Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore. The new Commanding Officer was esteemed a smart and efficient officer, in whom the men had entire confidence. He was gazetted to the 1st King's Dragoon Guards in 1892 and was Adjutant from 1897 to 1899, when he resigned his commission. A keen sportsman, he was Master of the East

Digitized by Google

Essex Hounds from 1899 to 1909, when he took over the Newmarket and Thurlow Hounds and hunted them for two seasons. His horse, "Legal Tender," won the Welsh Grand National in 1897. The annual training in 1911 was at Mucking Heath, Orsett, varied by a week-end visit to Southend, when the Regiment encamped on vacant ground close to Chalkwell Park, Westcliff. General Sir A. Paget again paid a visit and the inspecting officer was Colonel J. Burn-Murdoch, C.B., commanding the Eastern Mounted Brigade. The Regiment provided a detachment, under Captain Eustace Hill, for duty near the Marble Arch, for the public ceremonies in connection with the Coronation of King George V. In 1912 Marks Hall, Harlow, was the camping ground. Major-General Sir James Grierson, Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, made an inspection, as also did Colonel Harry Hodgson, C.V.O., commanding the Eastern Mounted Brigade. A musical ride was given by the local troop at the Orsett Show of that year and it was noteworthy that of the personnel all but two were tenants or employees on Major Whitmore's estate. The same year Captain A. R. Steele, of the 4th Hussars, was attached as Adjutant and he was with the Regiment when it embarked for France. Colchester was visited in 1913, when Colonel Hodgson again inspected. Then in May, 1914, the scene was changed to Thorndon Park, Brentwood, at the invitation of Lord Petre, and a "very profitable and enjoyable" training ensued. The Regiment was at full strength and Major-General Grierson was very pleased with his inspection. One recollection of this gallant officer is still vivid in the memory of those who were with him at that time. Whilst dining at Thorndon Park he remarked, in broad Scots, to those in his company, "It has always been my ambition through life to march through Berlin at the head of a Highland Brigade." Alas! for the vanity of human wishes. Designated to command the II Corps of the British Expeditionary Force in 1914, the General suddenly died whilst travelling by train in France to take up the post.

The last peaceful employ of the Essex Yeomanry was to compete with other Territorial units at the Essex County Rifle meeting on June 27th.

MOBILIZED FOR WAR SERVICE.

On August 2nd, 1914, war was declared against Germany and the order for mobilization found the Regiment ready and practically at full strength. There were embodied, on August 7th, at Ipswich, 27 officers and 441 other ranks, a total of 468, made up as follows :—

	Officers.	Men.	Total.
Regl. Headquarters	6	33	39
"A" Squadron	5	96	101
"B" Squadron	5	105	110
"C" Squadron	6	101	107
"D" Squadron	5	106	111

Digitized by Google

Fun at the last Peace Camp at Thorndon Park, 1914.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The horses available numbered 356. Lieut.-Colonel E. Deacon (Sloe House, Halstead) was in command, with Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore (Orsett Hall) second-in-command and Captain A. R. Steele, Adjutant.

The troop headquarters were:

"A" Squadron (Major Eustace Hill, Frettons, Danbury).—
Colchester
Ardleigh
Harwich
Clacton and Walton-on-the-Naze

"B" Squadron (Major Guy Gold, Bocking Place, Braintree):—
Braintree and Finchingfield
Tiptree and Maldon
Halstead
Chelmsford

"C" Squadron (Major Andrew Roddick, Upshire, Waltham Abbey):—
Waltham Abbey
Epping
Dunmow
Bishop's Stortford

"D" Squadron (Major A. Buxton, Knighton, Buckhurst Hill):—
Southend
Brentwood
Orsett
Stratford

Upon mobilization the Regiment was reduced to a three squadron basis and accordingly "D" Squadron was dissolved. Brentwood and Stratford troops were posted to "C" Squadron, Southend to "A" Squadron and Orsett to "B" Squadron. Major Buxton, who had succeeded Major Whitmore in "D" Squadron when the latter became second-in-command, was, therefore, supernumerary major.

Ipswich was the concentration area of the Eastern Mounted Brigade, commanded by Brig.-General H. Hodgson, C.V.O. With the Essex Yeomanry were the Norfolk and Suffolk Yeomanry and the Essex Battery, Royal Horse Artillery, under Lord Belhaven. All ranks rapidly improved in efficiency from the continuous training. The Brigade was shortly moved to the Woodbridge area, for the better defence of that part of the East Coast, the Essex Yeomanry being billeted at Melton. Whilst there, on November 10th, the Brigade was inspected by H.M. the King, who manifested great interest in a limber waggon which had been designed by Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore for carrying the machine gun and which he inspected minutely.

The Regiment had volunteered for active service and on November 12th intimation came that the Essex Yeomanry had

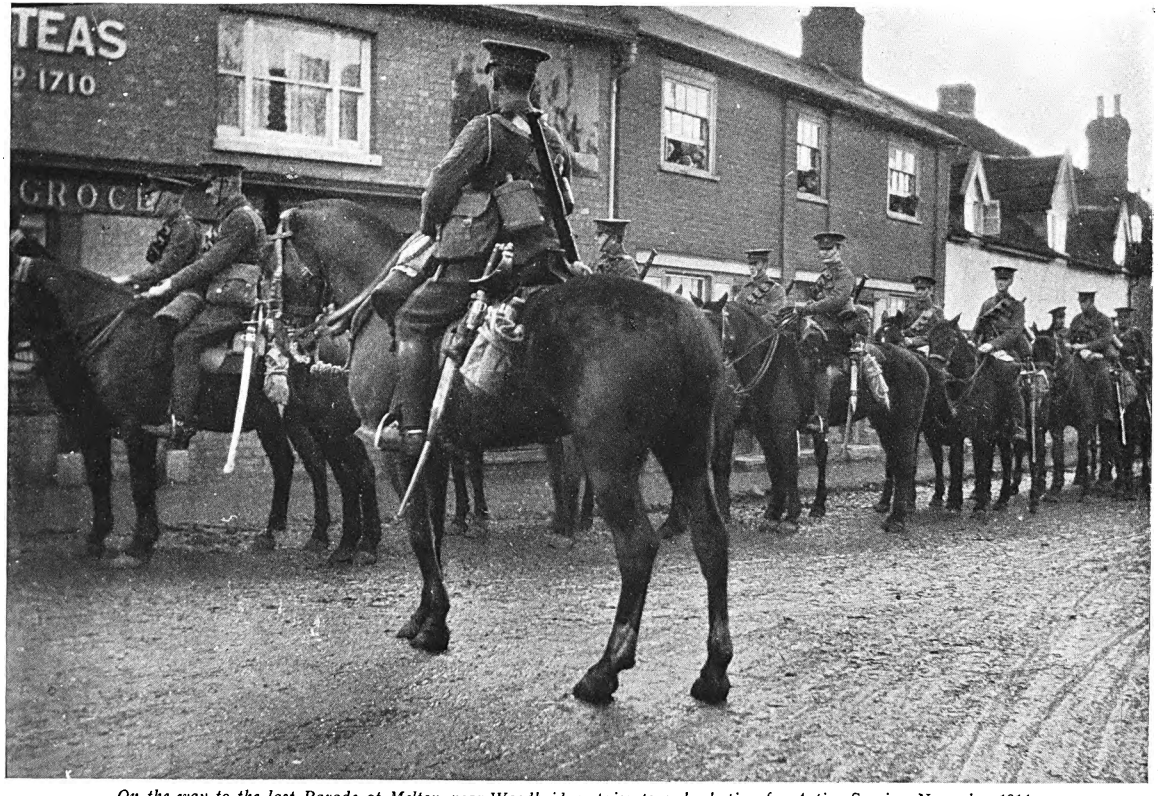
Digitized by Google

been selected to proceed overseas. The message to headquarters of Eastern Mounted Brigade, at Woodbridge, Suffolk, ran: Essex Yeomanry selected for service on Continent. Necessary steps to prepare unit for service overseas must be taken at once and it will be held in readiness to proceed abroad at short notice. Establishment as laid down in War Establishment, part 2. Report by wire number of officers and other ranks fulfilling following conditions, viz., medically fit for service, fully trained and 19 years of age or over. No personnel who do not fulfil these conditions are to proceed with the unit. Clothing and equipment to be inspected immediately and necessary replacements made without delay.

There was some little delay in providing new saddles and but for this fact officers and men would have been entitled to the Mons Star, for they landed in France a few days too late to be able to claim it. On November 28th G.O.C. Eastern Mounted Brigade issued the following farewell order:

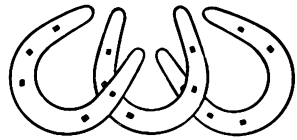
"Brigadier-General Hodgson much regrets time does not admit of the Essex Yeomanry assembling on parade to enable him personally to wish all ranks good-bye and good luck. He has no doubt that the Regiment has been selected among the first Yeomanry regiments for service overseas as being well-disciplined, efficient and trained to take its place with the Regulars. The General is confident that this is the case, and that the Essex Yeomanry will give an excellent account of itself. He is proud that one regiment of the Eastern Mounted Brigade has thus been selected, but it is a matter of great regret to him that the Regiment is leaving the Brigade, which he had so much hoped would have proceeded overseas intact under his command. He wishes Lieut.-Colonel Deacon and all ranks the best of luck."

Digitized by Google



On the way to the last Parade at Melton, near Woodbridge, prior to embarkation for Active Service, November 1914.

Digitized by Google



3rd CAVALRY DIVISION.

When all the Divisions were ordered to adopt Signs the Horseshoe was selected as the most appropriate, and the number of the Division was represented by the number of Shoes. These latter have no front clips and contain only five holes each. The sign was painted white on the Wagons.

From "*Divisional and Other Signs,*"
by Capt. V. Wheeler Holohan.

Digitized by Google

THE WAR, 1914-1919.

DEPARTURE FOR FRANCE.

By 7 a.m. on November 29th, 1914, the final farewells had been said at Woodbridge and the Regiment entrained for Southampton, amid assurances that " the war would be over " before they could get to the front. At the South Coast port they embarked at 7.30 p.m. upon the " Anglo-Canadian " for Havre, and so to the front. The Regiment had a strength of 493 of all ranks, made up as follows: Officers, 25; warrant officer, 1; sergeants, 34; corporals, 28; trumpeters, 5; privates, 400. There were 433 riding horses, 74 draught horses and six pack horses; also two machine guns, 16 four-wheeled wagons and two two-wheeled, seven motor cycles and eight bicycles. The distribution of strength was:—

	Officers.	Other Ranks.	Total.
Regimental Headquarters	6	34	40
" A " Squadron (Major E. Hill)	6	136	142
" B " Squadron (Major G. Gold)	6	138	144
" C " Squadron (Major A. Roddick)	6	135	141
Machine Gun Section (Lt. Tom Buxton)	1	25	26
	25	468	493

The weather was rough and the conditions uncomfortable. Le Havre was reached at midday on November 30th, but owing to lack of berthing accommodation the vessel cruised about in the bay until next day, not being allowed to anchor because a German submarine had been reported in the vicinity. As the " Anglo-Canadian " approached the quay, a voice called out, " Who are you ? " " Essex Yeomanry " was the proud reply. " You ain't no blooming good; you'd better go home," was the chilly welcome the voice accorded. Within six months the Regiment had earned special mention in despatches.

The Yeomanry disembarked on December 1st and marched to No. 1 Camp, which at that time was " a veritable sea of mud." That first night upon French soil remained a vivid memory for all who shared in its discomforts. It was raining and blowing a gale, which caused many tents to collapse—tents crowded, too, with fourteen men and fourteen saddles in each, " which is absurd," to use the phraseology of Euclid. The night was associated with a happier memory in the kindly entertainment to the officers afforded by Colonel Harry Cooper, then Vice-Chairman of the Essex Territorial Association, and

Digitized by Google

who was on duty in the French port. Colonel Cooper subsequently wrote home that he saw the Regiment entrain at Havre on December 3rd, and that the Essex Yeomanry were a credit to their country. Their destination was St. Omer, which was reached in a storm of sleet. A short march brought them to Wardrecques, where on December 5th they met Brig.-General C. Bulkeley Johnson, commanding the 8th Cavalry Brigade of the 3rd Cavalry Division, to which formation they were attached. The Division was then commanded by Major-General Sir Julian Byng, afterwards Lord Byng of Vimy. There was trench digging at Mont d'Hiver and then on December 11th the Regiment marched through Hazebrouck to Grand Sec Bois, which was their billeting area, the other regiments of the Brigade, 10th Royal Hussars and Royal Horse Guards, being close at hand in the Forêt de Nieppe. Within a few days came the first possibility of contact with the enemy, though on that occasion the cavalry were committed to a passive role. The 3rd Cavalry Division formed the mobile reserve whilst an attack was made on the German trenches near Wytschaete on December 14th. With the rest of the cavalry near Dranoutre, the Yeomen saw the artillery duel which accompanied the infantry offensive, but the cavalry were not required and after spending the night at St. Jans Cappel, they returned to their billets at Grand Sec Bois, where the rest of the month was spent practising dismounted attack.

IN THE YPRES SALIENT.

Training proceeded actively during the opening days of 1915, the chief incident in January being an inspection of the Brigade, dismounted, at La Souverein, on the 27th—the Kaiser's birthday—by the Commander-in-Chief, who was accompanied by the Prince of Wales. The next day, when a move was made to fresh billets, the Curé at Sec Bois wished the Regiment good luck and expressed regret at its departure. The Essex Yeomanry were billeted at Mont Croquet, and there welcomed the first draft, which arrived under 2nd Lieut. F. C. Meyer. This movement was preliminary to sharing the work of the infantry in the trenches, the 3rd Cavalry Division being deputed to take over a section east of Ypres from the French. Capt. E. A. Ruggles-Brise ("B" Squadron) and Lieut. C. N. Gilbey ("A" Squadron) with 15 other ranks formed the advance party and were the first Essex Yeomen in the trenches. "A" Squadron were determined to have the wherewithal to light a fire and cook some food, so at great labour they carried up a substantial supply of firewood, only to find that the trenches were situated in what had been once a wood! The party were attached to a French regiment for a couple of days, whom they found very kind and friendly; they were also much impressed by their steadiness and excellent discipline. The Division moved on February 3rd, in two echelons. The first, under Brigadier General

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OFFICERS OF THE ESSEX YEOMANRY, AUGUST 1914.

Standing (left to right): Capt. J. McArthur, A.V.C.; 2nd Lieut. T. F. Buxton; 2nd Lieut. C. J. Round; Lieut. G. S. Johnstone (killed 13/5/15); 2nd Lieut. H. P. Holt (wounded 13/5/15); 2nd Lieut. G. P. N. Reid (killed 13/5/15); 2nd Lieut. A. G. Swire (killed 13/5/15); Lieut. R. Edwards (wounded 3/5/15); 2nd Lieut. S. J. Tufnell (wounded 9/10/18); 2nd Lieut. F. C. Meyer (wounded 21/3/18); Capt. J. O. Parker (wounded 2/9/17); 2nd Lieut. C. N. Gilbey (wounded 11/4/17); Lieut.-Quartermaster E. J. Sayer (wounded 3/12/16); Capt. E. A. Ruggles-Brise (wounded 27/9/15); Lieut. R. A. Thompson. Sitting (left to right): Lieut. G. F. White R.A.M.C.; Capt. & Adjutant A. R. Steele (wounded 13/5/15); Major E. Hill (wounded 11/4/17); Major A. Roddick (killed 13/5/15); Lieut.-Colonel E. Deacon (killed 13/5/15); Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore (wounded 13/5/15 and 11/4/17); Major G. G. Gold (wounded 11/4/17); Major A. Buxton (wounded 11 4/17); Capt. R. G. Proby.

Digitized by Google

C. T. McM. Kavanagh, C.B., D.S.O., was composed of 1st and 2nd Life Guards and the Leicester Yeomanry, of the 7th Cavalry Brigade, and Royal Horse Guards and "A" Squadron, Essex Yeomanry, of the 8th Cavalry Brigade. The second echelon, in charge of Brig.-General D. G. M. Campbell, C.B., consisted of the 6th Cavalry Brigade, with 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry (less one squadron), of the 8th Cavalry Brigade. The Division rode on 'buses by way of Steenvoorde, Poperinghe and Vlamertinghe to a "bushead," at which point the men alighted and marched along the Ypres-Menin road, the first echelon proceeding straight to the trenches and the second to billets at the Ecole de Bienfaisance, Ypres. The inhabitants of the city for a while did a huge business with British troops, especially in provisions. Thus it was, being with the first echelon, that "A" Squadron (Major Eustace Hill) had the honour of being the first squadron to face the enemy. They held the left of the divisional line with the Royal Horse Guards, who had a squadron each to the right and left of the Essex men, with the third in support. On February 8th, the same day that "B" and "C" Squadrons marched through Zillebeke to relieve their comrades of "A" Squadron, a ration party of "A" Squadron was shelled whilst at work near Hooge and the first casualties of the Regiment were sustained, Private W. Roberts, of Wickford, being killed and nine others wounded. Major Hill, upon being informed of the incident, took out a party and buried Roberts with military honours, with enemy shell-fire as a requiem.

The weather was bad and the trenches were very muddy. They were quite close to the enemy, varying from 10 yards on the left to 80 yards on the right — so close, indeed, that a matchbox was thrown into the Blues' trench containing a note, which ran: "We are a battalion of an Alsace regiment; don't shoot us and we won't shoot you. Vive la France, but Germany comes first." A humorous tale of that time is still treasured by members of the Essex Yeomanry. One trooper wrote home: "The Regiment is now in the trenches. Shrapnel by day; star shells by night; life is a hell on earth." As a matter of fact, this man with the graphic pen of a war correspondent had been left behind at billets with the horses, fully thirty miles away from trenches, shrapnel and star shells!

Lieutenant-Colonel Whitmore narrates the story of the manufacture of a giant periscope during this tour of the trenches. He says:[1] "It was made out of a length of rain-pipe taken from the Reformatory at Ypres, measuring about 20ft. in length and about three inches in diameter. This pipe, when covered with bark from the trees in the wood at Zillebeke in which the trenches were situated, made a complete

1 p.16. "The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War." (*Whitmore*).

Digitized by Google

representation of the trees themselves, most of which had the tops blown off, leaving jagged ends varying from 15ft. to 30ft. from the ground. Mirrors were inserted at each end of the pipe, similar to an ordinary periscope, the topmost mirror being concealed by rough pieces of bark and chips to represent the broken end of a tree. The first of these was erected during the night and was a great success, and by turning it in any direction it was possible to see much which was otherwise impossible to observe. This giant periscope remained in position for many weeks and was taken over by the relieving troops. The success of this experiment caused many more to be erected, with the result that before long the forest of periscopes became observed by the enemy, who directed their snipers on to them. Their accurate fire caused them to be shot down as soon as put into position. But the original stood the test and remained for a long time undetected." Major Buxton records that another periscope, erected in the daytime, was spotted at once and its glass shot out.

The 8th Cavalry Brigade remained in the line from February 3rd-13th, and then went into reserve in a fleet of 80 motor 'buses, which, drawn up in the great square of Ypres and still covered with their London advertisements, constituted a very interesting sight. The Essex Yeomanry were billeted at Blaringhem. The Regiment was highly pleased with a letter which the Colonel received from the Divisional Commander, stating that the left sector commanders had reported, "All ranks were remarkably steady under fire and full of keenness and resourcefulness." It is worthy of record that when the Essex Yeomanry were in the trenches the latter were being mined by the Germans. Not long after their departure the mine was exploded, with serious loss to the troops then in occupation.

After the heavy weather of the winter months, March was fine and bright, an agreeable change. There was nothing to record, however, of active warfare so far as the Essex Yeomen were concerned. The 3rd Cavalry Division stood to in billets at 5 a.m. on March 10th, during the attack upon Neuve Chapelle by the First Army, and turned out again at 3 p.m., but went back to billets at 5 p.m. The next day the Regiment paraded at 4 a.m., "on the darkest morning I have ever known," and joined the Division concentrated near La Motte. It was held in readiness there until the 13th. The Essex Yeomanry meanwhile occupied its old billets at Grand Sec Bois. The remainder of the month was spent in training at Blaringhem, with the regimental headquarters at Wardrecques station. Whilst there H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught, who was attached to the headquarters of the 8th Cavalry Brigade, gave a silver cup for a Marathon race, which the Essex Yeomanry won with 260 points, the 10th Hussars being second with 180 points and the Royal Horse Guards third with 100 points. The

Digitized by Google

competition was decided in favour of the regiment having the most men in the first twenty places, and although Corporal Wilson (10th Hussars) was first, Lieut. S. J. Tufnell was second and there followed several other Yeomen who took the count. The Prince of Wales paid another visit during the last week in March. In April the training was continued. The Epping troop were awarded the prize for the best troop. A move was made to Mont Croquet on April 6th, where the Regiment stayed for a fortnight. Then came the opening of the Second Battle of Ypres and the dire threat to Ypres. There was a rapid move on the morning of April 23rd, via Hazebrouck and Caestre, to Abeele, where the men slept in the open. During the night the 50th Territorial Division, who had just landed, marched through the town on their way to the front, singing the latest song, "The Devil's Ball." Next day the Regiment was to the south-west of Vlamertinghe, where each man received another 100 rounds of ammunition. The 24th was a wretchedly wet night and nearly all were sleeping in the open. One man slipped into the stables and tried to sleep in a manger, but his rest was much broken by the horse snuffling and trying to nibble him! On April 25th the Brigade was in the saddle again from 6 a.m. to 10.30 a.m., and at 1 p.m. was transferred to Peselhoek, north of Poperinghe, from this point watching the shelling of the latter town. After a hard day the Essex Yeomanry were billeted at Winnezeele. They were on the move again on the 26th, marching to Abeele and thence to a point south of Poperinghe, at 10 a.m., where the Brigade encamped and a large dismounted party went forward to act as reserves. The roads and town of Poperinghe were heavily shelled, the horses having to be released from the horse lines on that account. Casualties were sustained by shell-fire on April 28th, upon which day the Brigade moved back to Abeele, where it remained four days. The Essex Yeomanry during that time were successively at Vlamertinghe and Steenvoorde.

During this time the Essex Yeomanry witnessed the harrowing spectacle of the evacuation of the civil population. "It was not an uncommon sight to see a bedridden old man or woman lying in a bed which had been hoisted on to the top of a farm cart already filled with furniture and belongings of all descriptions. The roads were, indeed, a sorry sight with farm wagons, carts, carriages, cattle, old men, women with children, some in arms, some in perambulators, and every conceivable form of domestic life moving west, and, on the other hand, troops, cavalry, artillery limbers and supply lorries moving towards the battle area."[1]

On May 1st flannel was served out to be worn over the nose and mouth as a protection against German gas, and two days later the Brigade were again near to Vlamertinghe and a

1 p.22. "The 10th P.W.O. Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War." (*Whitmore*).

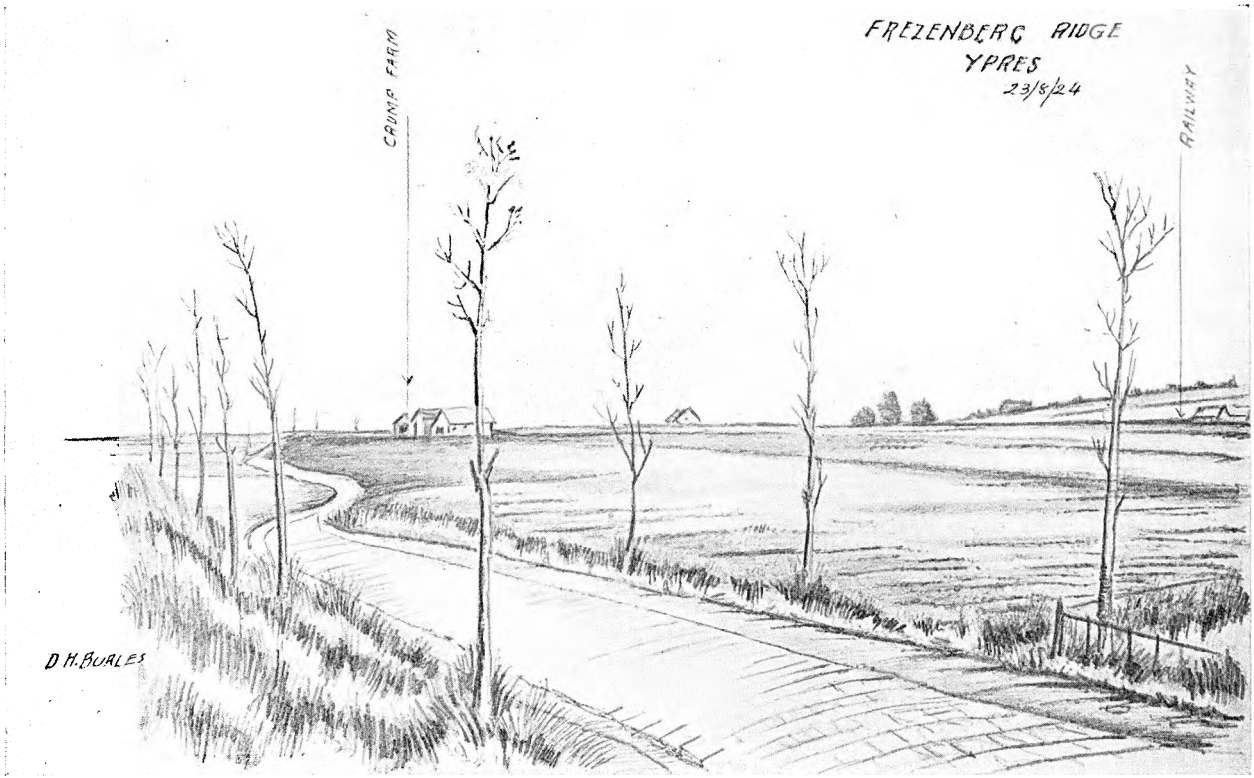
Digitized by Google

dismounted party, consisting of 315 officers and men per regiment, was marched to a field on the Poperinghe-Ypres road, east of Vlamertinghe, in reserve, whilst the line was being adjusted in front of Ypres. This force arrived at its rendezvous at 1.15 a.m. after a cross-country march and remained there for three hours and a half in heavy rain, so that it was with relief that the order came for the return to quarters. Next day, May 4th, the Brigade was at Houtkerque, but only stayed there the night, for on May 5th there was a move to Brielen, which was reached at 7.30 p.m. Lieut.-Colonel Deacon, with a dismounted party of 180 officers and men from each regiment, marched to the Yser Canal to dig trenches for the V Corps. It was whilst employed upon this service that the Essex men saw Ypres heavily shelled and the town set on fire in several places. After four hours' arduous work the party returned to their horses at 1.45 a.m. on May 6th and reached their billets at 5.30 a.m. On May 7th the Regiment was back at Mt. Croquet. Within a week the Essex Yeomanry were playing a distinguished part in the defence of Ypres.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATION

Digitized by Google



The Scene of the Charge on May 13th, 1915.

Digitized by Google

FREZENBERG RIDGE.

The Battle of Frezenberg Ridge (May 13th, 1915) is so called from an eminence of no great height on the Ypres-Zonnebeke road and lying between Verlorenhoek and the village of Frezenberg. It is typical Ypres country, wide marshy stretches, with just here and there a slight rise or ridge to emphasize the general flatness. What is popularly known as the Second Battle of Ypres had approached its climax. The Germans were making a desperate effort to break the line of infantry and cavalry which barred the way to Ypres, with its knot of rail and road communication with the sea, and it was during this fighting that poison gas was used for the first time. The evacuation of the British advanced positions ended on May 4th and marked the close of the first stage of the Battle, but there were three weeks of strenuous fighting to follow, in the course of which the Germans delivered three great attacks. With the first two (those of May 8th and 13th) the Essex Yeomanry had an intimate concern. They were not engaged in the encounter of May 8th, but as a result of the enemy's offensive on that day the Germans reached the neighbourhood of Frezenberg and were narrowly prevented by the 27th Division from obtaining command of the Menin Road. When the attack of May 13th was made that Division had been relieved. The 1st Cavalry Division were in occupation of the line from a point north-east of Verlorenhoek up to the Roulers railway and the 3rd Cavalry Division from the railway to Bellewaarde Lake, both divisions acting as infantry. The 3rd Division had the 6th and 7th Brigades in line, with the 8th Brigade (Brig.-General Bulkeley Johnson) in support. The Germans put down a heavy bombardment, followed by infantry assault upon trenches which had been almost obliterated in some sectors by the intensity of the gunfire, and they occupied a considerable part of the line. Counter-attacks by the cavalry drove the enemy out again, but the violence of their artillery retaliation forced the British troops to establish a new line in the rear of their original position, the hamlet of Verlorenhoek passing into German hands.

That, briefly, was the result of the day's fighting, but its interest for Essex men and women lies not so much in the bare record of the final positions of the closely locked antagonists as in the story of the way in which the Essex Yeomanry, with comrades of other units, rallied to the counter-attack and forced the Germans to evacuate the trenches which they had taken, by their valour filling the gap and preventing the enemy exploiting his initial success and pressing on to Ypres. It is a story which will be told at many an Essex fireside when the survivors have long since joined their fallen comrades and heard the last earthly

Digitized by Google

reveille. The Ypres Salient has scarcely a yard of soil upon which the Essex soldier did not tread in the four years of bloodshed there; its cemeteries are crowded with men of the home county who perished in its defence—their memorial the great tradition of self-sacrifice which the Salient has come to signify in national sentiment. Yet among many memorable days May 13th stands conspicuous, for at Frezenberg Ridge the Essex Yeomanry first came to grips with the foe in a counterstroke which proved their worth, and at Shelltrap Farm, on the left, the 2nd Essex, by a similar timely movement, closed the line and earned much glory.

The 3rd Cavalry Division had been concentrated at Brielen on May 9th, under Major General C. J. Briggs, C.B., D.S.O., the 8th Brigade having been brought there by motor 'buses from Mont Croquet with a strength of 90 men per squadron, as follows:

	Officers.	Other ranks.
Royal Horse Guards	16	277
Tenth Royal Hussars	17	281
Essex Yeomanry	17	285

Intermittent shell-fire smote the huts in which the troops were billeted, but the casualties were not serious. On May 10th the Essex Yeomen were close by Ypres, for in the night hours they were employed in digging by the Yperlée Canal, one party being engaged in destroying fences almost inside the burning city. To one trooper the doomed place appeared "a mass of flames, with dead horses and people lying around." There was a hurried movement at 7 p.m. on the 11th, when a party was despatched to the trenches near Hooge Château, under Lieut. V. T. G. Hine, to inspect them preparatory to taking over from the 8th Infantry Brigade, but the order was cancelled and the men returned in the early hours of the following morning. At night-time on May 12th came another order. The Royal Horse Guards and 10th Hussars were moved into the support trenches, in reserve to the 7th Cavalry Brigade, and the Essex Yeomanry received instructions to dig a communication trench at Bellewaarde, east of the reservoir and railway, north of the Ypres-Menin road and near to the G.H.Q. trenches, east of Potijze. The task set the Yeomanry was difficult and laborious and the digging parties were frequently forced to lie flat, as the ground was searched by machine guns and rifles. Dawn was breaking when Lieut.-Colonel Deacon withdrew two squadrons and took them to the support line in front of Potijze Château, leaving Major F. Whitmore, with "B" Squadron (Captain E. A. Ruggles-Brise), to make as much progress as possible in the wet clay. Though all ranks laboured hard, the increasing light of day caused the task to be abandoned, for the enemy had got the range and several casualties were sustained. "B" Squadron accordingly rejoined the remainder of the Regiment, which, at 3 a.m., lay on the west of the Potijze-Verlorenhoek road, on the north-eastern edge of the garden of Potijze Château, with the 10th Hussars and Blues on the east.

Digitized by Google

The Bays (2nd Dragoon Guards) were in front of the Essex, and the 1st and 2nd Life Guards in line with the former on the east of the road, with 3rd Dragoon Guards and Leicestershire and Somersetshire Yeomanry to the east of them.

At 4 a.m. upon a "day of biting north winds and drenching rains," the bombardment, which had quietened down, broke out with fresh violence, the mile long front and support lines of the 3rd Cavalry Division receiving special attention. "A dense cloud of smoke hung over the whole area; buildings and trenches were alike demolished beyond recognition." Trees fell constantly in the grounds of the Château. "It was our first experience of bad shelling," wrote an officer, "and it was extraordinarily unpleasant and frightening. I well remember, when I was feeling rather shaken, seeing Andrew Roddick standing on the parapet of the trench, surveying the situation through his field glasses as coolly as if it was a field day in England. It was an astonishingly brave act and pulled me together wonderfully." No serious casualties occurred to the Essex Yeomanry until about 1 p.m., when an officer's servant was killed by a shrapnel bullet whilst in the act of handing a tin of bully beef to the officers of "B" Squadron for lunch. Major F. Whitmore, who was being carried to the rear, severely wounded whilst taking "B" Squadron to the G.H.Q. line, noticed the German shells bouncing along the Verlorenhoek road, not more than a third of them exploding, recalling Kincaid's experience with the Rifle Brigade at Fuentes d'Onoro, in the Peninsular War, over one hundred years before, when he watched the cannon balls bounding along the rocky ground. Major Buxton observed a nightingale in the Château garden at Potijze, which never ceased its singing during this hurricane! "It began at 3 a.m. Half an hour afterwards German shells were rained upon the garden incessantly throughout the day. The bird sang without a pause where the shells lay thickest until 12 noon and survived, for next morning he started again as cheerily as ever." The 6th Brigade held its front, but about 6 a.m. the murderous shell-fire had its effect on the 7th Cavalry Brigade, and the Essex men, at the same time that they received telephone assurance that the front line was intact, saw a cavalryman jump into their trench with part of a machine gun under his arm, too exhausted to speak. This incident was part of a retrograde movement which left a gap to the left of the 6th Brigade and to fill the rent the Royal Horse Guards and 10th Hussars, about 11 a.m., were moved into an incomplete line of trenches 400 yards ahead, the Essex Yeomanry crossing the road and taking the position vacated by these regiments soon after midday.

Orders were received by the 3rd Cavalry Division at 10.25 a.m. to organize a counter-attack to repair the line, preparations for which had been already commenced. The position was critical. The width of the gap in the front line was a matter of speculation,

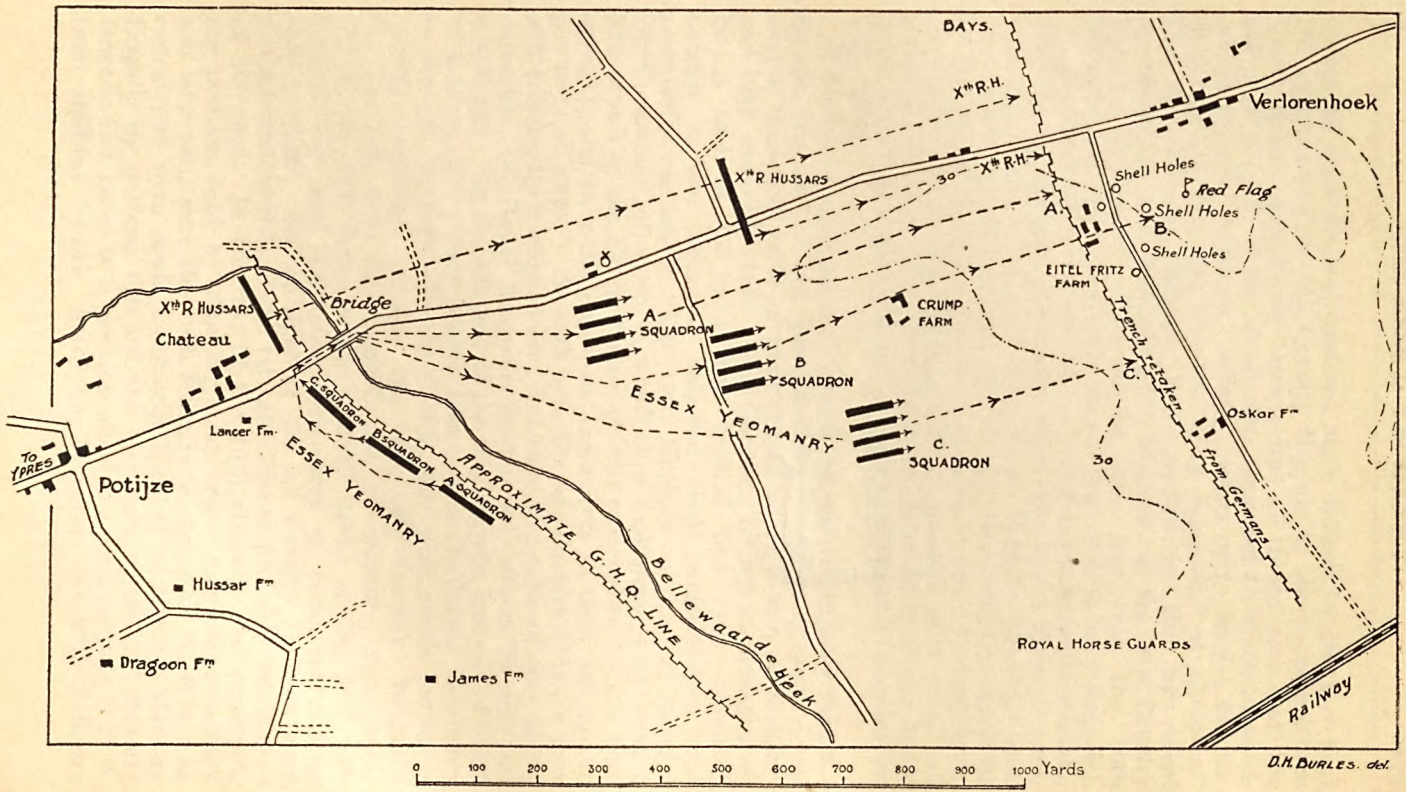
Digitized by Google

whilst the situation was rendered more difficult by the fact that the allotment of the 8th Cavalry Brigade to the counter-attack would almost denude the reserve line of troops and that the safety of the left of the sector also appeared to be endangered. At 12.45 p.m., however, definite orders were issued for the counterstroke, the lost trenches to be regained "at all costs." The 8th Cavalry Brigade was assisted in the movement by armoured cars, with the 19th Hussars, of the 9th Cavalry Brigade, in support. The general idea was that the 10th Hussars, with their left pivoted on the Bays (1st Cavalry Brigade), who had stood firm, would advance towards the white farmhouse, followed by the Essex Yeomanry, whilst the Royal Horse Guards, with their right pivoted on the 6th Cavalry Brigade, would advance in a similar manner on the right, the armoured cars co-operating by moving down the road as far as possible towards Verlorenhoek. A preliminary bombardment would commence at 2 p.m. and continue until 2.30 p.m., at which hour the counter-attack would be launched, the artillery then covering the advance by lengthening their range.

Information reaching divisional headquarters showed that the charge was carried out with the utmost gallantry and vigour over a thousand yards of ground and under a rain of shrapnel and high explosive shell. The Germans retired in disorganized bodies and at 3.5 p.m. the original line was regained, though it had been so battered that consolidation was practically impossible. The 10th Hussars on the left found a certain amount of cover, of which they took prompt advantage. The attack of the Essex Yeomanry was reported to "have been splendid and they did not spare themselves in their attempt to get to hand grips." At 4.45 p.m. the 6th Cavalry Brigade were still holding their original line, but they had suffered very heavy casualties, 1st Royal Dragoons having only about 70 men left out of 230. On the left rear of the 6th Brigade, but out of touch with them, was a party of the Blues, with the Essex Yeomanry to the left of them. In the G.H.Q. line were small parties of various regiments of the 7th and 8th Cavalry Brigades. On the left, near the original line of trenches, were some 100 of the 10th Hussars and a small party of the 2nd Life Guards, who had endeavoured to carry up some entrenching tools to them. On the right of the 1st Cavalry Division were several small parties of the 1st Life Guards, probably totalling in all 100 men. In the rear of the 10th Hussars, and occupying the position held by that regiment before the counter-attack was launched, were the 19th Hussars in support. At 6.10 p.m. endeavours were made to protect the left of the 6th Cavalry Brigade by pushing forward the remnants of the 7th Cavalry Brigade and Blues to a position along the road running N.N.W. from Railway Wood. Later on, however, the 27th Infantry

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



FREZENBERG RIDGE: Disposition of Essex Yeomanry prior to the charge of May 13th, 1915.

Digitized by Google

Division took over on the right up to the railway inclusive, the 6th Cavalry Brigade (less North Somerset Yeomanry, but inclusive of 10th Hussars) occupying a new line near Witte Poort Farm, adjacent to the Potijze-Verlorenhoek Road. The remaining cavalry regiments were constituted the reserve in G.H.Q. line.

THE CHARGE.

Now to return to the movements of the 8th Cavalry Brigade and in particular those of the Essex Yeomanry. The regimental commanders were summoned to Potijze Château at 1.30 p.m., where Brig.-General Bulkeley Johnson had established his headquarters, and informed that a counter-attack to reoccupy the first line trenches would take place at 2.15 p.m.—Royal Horse Guards on the right, 10th Hussars on the left, with Essex Yeomanry in support. The last-named had "C" Squadron (Major Roddick) on the right, "B" Squadron (Captain E. A. Ruggles-Brise) on the left and "A" Squadron (Captain J. O. Parker) in support. The formation was altered later, for orders were given to place the Essex Yeomanry on the right of the Hussars, and Lieut.-Colonel Deacon was given ten minutes within which to move off. Thus the line ran: Royal Horse Guards, Essex Yeomanry, 10th Hussars. It will have been noticed that the record of the 3rd Cavalry Division stated the time of the assault was 2.30 p.m., but the senior officers of the Essex Yeomanry were informed about 2 p.m. that they were to attack in ten minutes. The problem for the Essex was the exact location of the 10th Hussars, who were to advance up the Verlorenhoek road. Their headquarters were believed to be a white farm with green shutters half-way up the rising ground. Colonel Deacon ordered Major Buxton, with two scouts (Private R. Holland and Private Stacy Bates), at 2.12 p.m. to find Lieut.-Colonel E. R. A. Shearman, commanding the 10th Hussars, and inform him that the Essex were coming up under his orders in support at 2.15 p.m. Major Buxton had scarce started on his errand when he was fired upon from the farmhouse, but "after running up and down ditches like a hunted fox," he and the scouts succeeded in locating the 10th Hussars short of the farm and to the left of it. Colonel Shearman indicated the objective to Major Buxton, expressing confident belief that he would take the trenches "with the greatest ease," but that he would not start until 2.30 p.m. The Essex Yeomanry meanwhile had filed out of the trenches, led by Major A. Roddick, who was quietly smoking his pipe, with his walking stick in his hand, as if starting upon a stroll round his farm. The Regiment deployed to the right, which brought it into an echelon formation with "C" Squadron leading on the right. The advance was thus in echelon of squadrons in line of troop columns rather than in line of squadron columns, owing to the necessity for all squadrons defiling from the trenches at the same point, the rear squadron

Digitized by Google

being, of course, delayed. "Running like stags," cheering and with bayonets fixed, the Yeomanry reached the Hussars at 2.18 p.m. An effort was made to stay the rush of the Essex, as the Territorial artillery were engaged shelling the trenches held by the enemy. Exactly as the Yeomanry arrived in line with the 10th Hussars, however, a party of thirty Germans bolted from a trench 200 yards ahead. Immediately the cry came, "Tally ho! Yonder they go!" The view holloa was taken up, the men could not be restrained—"there was no chance of stopping them or the 10th, who got up from their trenches, and the whole line went straight on as fast as they could go up hill through the mud, holloaing like mad. We were five minutes too soon and the bombardment, which had always been short, continuing, we ran straight into it." Major Roddick, leading "C" Squadron, fell at the head of his men as the Yeomanry reached the 10th Hussars, shot through the heart by a sniper posted at the farm buildings in front. His last words were, "Come on, boys! Imagine you are on parade!"

Suffering many casualties and slipping in the mud amid an infernal racket of fire, the 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomen rushed up the hill and poured over the crest into the trenches on the forward slope. For the most part the Germans had retired ere the troops entered their position, but here and there men remained. In some cases they waited until the onrush surged within a hundred yards of them and then hastily withdrew, the Yeomen firing on them from the captured trench; others were either caught ere they could get away or resolved to fight it out to the last. One trooper wrote home that he was about to deal with one of the Germans who had remained in the trench when he was hit and a comrade finished his task. The attackers found the ground wet and uncomfortable, the mud being ankle-deep in places, but within ten minutes they were passing round cigars and cigarettes which were found there; "they were very good, too." Others, even more fortunate, enjoyed coffee and sausages. One officer ate German bread, drank German coffee and dug in with a German spade. The respite was of short duration. Ere long powerful fire was directed upon the line, its terrible accuracy being accounted for by the presence of a small dark red flag which a German had stuck in the parapet of the trench to which the survivors of the front line had retired. There was only one line to hold and there were no supports. Movement was practically impossible and a messenger whom Major Buxton, now in command (Lieut.-Colonel Deacon and Major Roddick having been killed), despatched to get into touch with the Royal Horse Guards, on the right, was immediately shot. To add to the anxiety, a large body of the enemy was observed in the neighbourhood of Verlorenhoek hill. The rain continuing, many of the rifles jammed in the liquid mud. "My worst

Digitized by Google

The late MAJOR A. RODDICK, killed in the charge of May 13th, 1915.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

trouble was my rifle, it got jammed and I was unable to fire a shot." Thus wrote one trooper, whilst an officer, who slept soundly the night following upon a pillow of bully beef tins, stated, "The trying thing was that we were all wet through, as it rained all the afternoon. It handicapped us a lot, as the rifles got choked and we could not fire." The bombardment was endured for two hours with gallant constancy. A party of the enemy endeavoured to make its way down the Verlorenhoek road and another was threatening the right. Between 4 p.m. and 5 p.m. word came from the 10th Hussars that the Essex Yeomen were to file out of the captured line and retire over the crest of the hill. The withdrawal of "A" and "C" Squadrons was rapidly effected under heavy shell and rifle fire. A constant source of comment all day was the overwhelming nature of the German bombardment and the relatively feeble British reply. The inferiority in artillery strength was most marked.

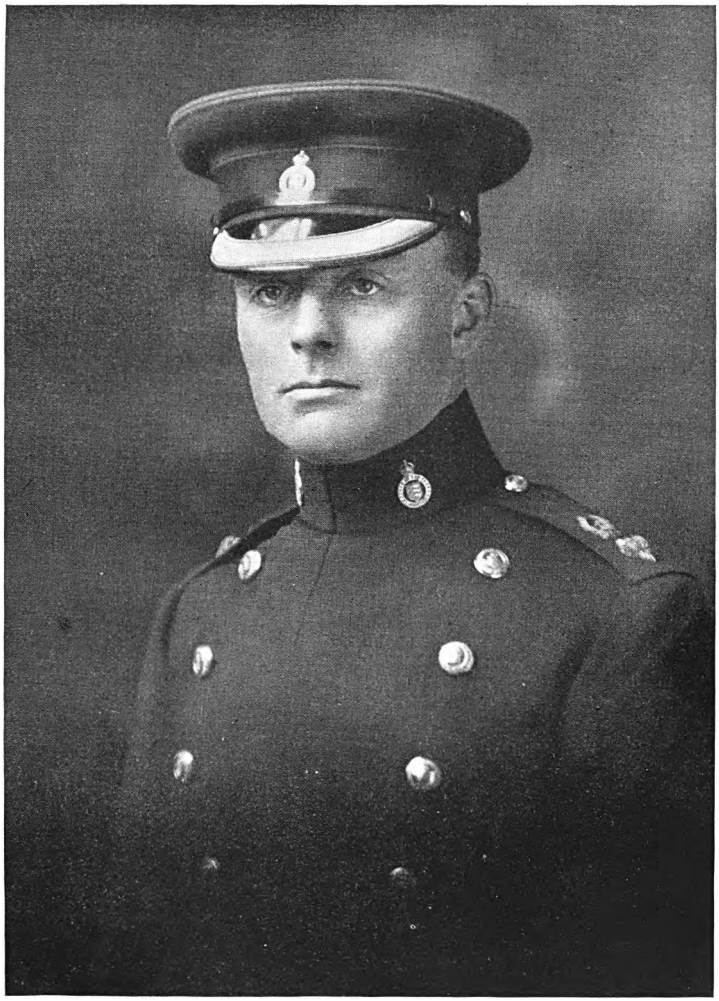
HOW "B" SQUADRON HELD THE FARM.

There was one exploit which deserves special mention, that of "B" Squadron, led by Captain Ruggles-Brise. Its gallant conduct brought enthusiastic commendation from the Brigadier General commanding the 8th Cavalry Brigade—"The behaviour of the squadron which maintained its position in the ruined houses, although cut off, until after dark, and its subsequent withdrawal in good order, was specially meritorious." Happily, the story can be told in Captain Ruggles-Brise's own words: I halted my squadron, "B," at a low fence half-way up the gentle slope for a few seconds' breather and then went on again to the objective, where we found a shallow trench running just in rear of a considerable group of farm buildings, from which the enemy were now bolting in twos and threes. We killed several and then the last one bolted. I shouted "Shoot him!" but he managed to get some way until he dropped amidst a chorus of "I got him, sir" from my men. Meanwhile, I had lost sight completely of "C" Squadron on my right and, thinking they had gone on, determined to advance by a rush to the further side of the buildings so as to avoid leaving a gap and their left flank exposed. I ordered "Advance," but it was a deadly affair and few of us got to the further side of the buildings, where we found no trench at all, but formed a rough line by jumping in little groups into shell-holes. Glen Swire fell in the rush at the head of his troop. We were now on the crest of the ridge and looking down the reverse slope, but the rough ground made it impossible exactly to locate the German line except that I saw a group of Germans running and disappearing about 70 yards away, where a small red flag was sticking in the ground. Meanwhile, snipers were in shell-holes near by and they took heavy toll of any of us who had not found the cover of a shell-hole at once at the end of the rush. But the machine gunfire at this

360703A
Digitized by Google

point was heaviest and the hum of bullets reminded me of the song of a sewing machine. Meanwhile, the farm buildings were being pounded to pieces by H.E. fire and I remember the roof of one building sliding off complete. In my shell-hole, which was none too large, were seven of us, four of whom were wounded, and soon Sergeant Deakin next me was killed by a bullet through the temple while in the act of firing. He never made any movement at all and stiffened in a living attitude. A never-ceasing, nasty, cold drizzling rain had soaked us, and all our rifles were jammed with slime and mud. None of the magazines would work and we were reduced to loading singly, the wounded in my shell-hole acting as loaders, trying to load and clean one rifle while we fired our few single rounds from another. At about 3.30 p.m. (?5.30) a message was passed along from the left saying there was an order to retire. I did not consider it wise to do this. The shelling and rifle fire had died down considerably and so long as we remained where we were and were able to demonstrate our presence we were holding the position we had been ordered to occupy. About half an hour later a message came again from the left saying that "A" Squadron and the X.R.H., who had occupied a trench a little to the rear of our left, had retired. As it had been impossible to establish communication with "C" Squadron on our right, it became evident that the remains of "B" Squadron were completely "in the air." I considered it still unwise to withdraw, as reinforcements might possibly arrive and so long as we remained we still fulfilled our purpose. Further, any retirement from our exposed position must have given away the fact of the retirement and the slightest exposure on our part brought an immediate burst of fire from the enemy, who were still very much on the alert. I accordingly decided to remain until dark and gave preliminary orders in whispers to be passed from shell-hole to shell-hole as to the method of retirement when the order should be given. Soon afterwards Sergeant Walker left his shell-hole in an attempt to carry a message, but was immediately hit, and on Lieut. Thomson attempting to come across the open to reach me I immediately waved him back, and, luckily, he regained his shell-hole in safety. Darkness began to fall, the rain had ceased and I decided to give the order for retirement. I was just about to give the signal when a "Verey" light was sent up from the enemy trenches, making everything as clear as day. I decided to wait half an hour and then gave the signal, on which we quietly left our shell-holes and, gathering up such wounded as we could and identifying as many as possible of our dead comrades, including Glen Swire, we made our way back down the slope to the G.H.Q. line. On the way we were challenged and nearly fired on by some of our own troops, who were occupying a short length of trench about half-way down the slope. We eventually reached the G.H.Q. line and I reported to Major Buxton, whom I found in command of the

Digitized by Google



The late LIEUT.-COLONEL E. DEACON, who commanded the Essex Yeomanry when they went on Active Service and was killed in the charge of May 13th, 1915.

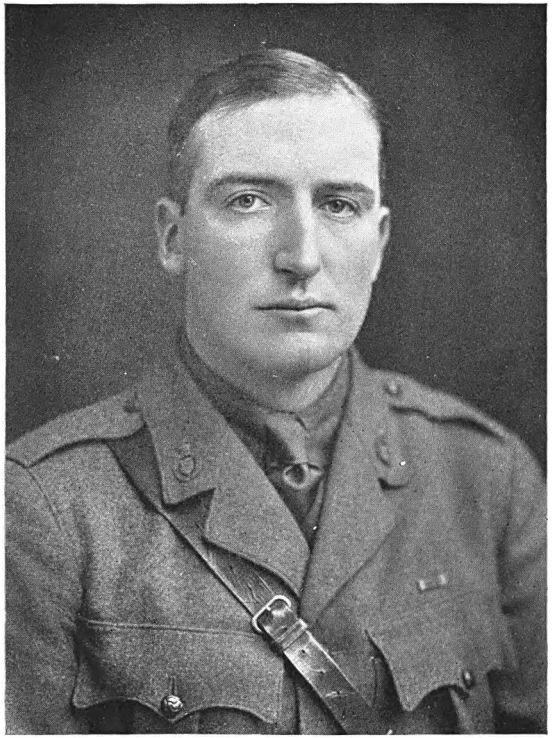
Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



MAJOR A. BUXTON, D.S.O.

MAJOR E. A. RUGGLES-BRISE, M.C.

Digitized by Google

remnants of the Regiment and who had given us up for lost. "B" Squadron started the day with a total of 72 all ranks and on calling the roll we found only 12 of us left. The casualties in the Squadron were, therefore, 60, of whom 30 were killed or died of wounds and 30 were wounded.

Half an hour after "A" and "C" Squadrons reached the reserve position figures were observed on the skyline of the left front and the German attack was thought to be materializing, but Major Buxton quickly satisfied himself, with the aid of a telescope, that the figures were those of the Bays (2nd Dragoon Guards), who were holding the left flank of the 8th Brigade and who had not moved during the whole of the fighting. "Their splendid steadiness," wrote one officer, "did more than anything else to stop the front line going entirely." About 6 p.m. the Yeomanry had orders to concentrate near the G.H.Q. line on the main road, and the 10th Hussars moved out at dusk to continue the line to the right of the Bays.

Thus the Essex Yeomanry went again into reserve, but of the 302 officers and men who had left Brielen, 60 per cent. were casualties. "We looked a comical lot, those of us who could walk," wrote one. "We were covered in mud; some had heads bandaged, some arms and some legs—but all were cheery." What a triumph they had achieved! "The unfortunate fact that we were five minutes too early," wrote an officer, "caused a number of casualties from our own guns, but if the attack had not gone forward with all the noise and pace with which it did I feel sure the Germans would not have bolted and we should never have taken the trench. The counter-attack, to judge from their behaviour at the time and subsequent communiques, frightened them and probably stopped any idea which they might have had of pressing through to Ypres, which they could certainly have done." What tales the men had to tell! "A bullet touched my top lip," said a trooper, "but it was nothing more than a clean shave. Then after getting into the German trenches I was blown up by a Jack Johnson and covered up for a while, but I managed to get out, losing everything I possessed, even my puttees had gone." A stalwart corporal, at the close of the charge, realized that his left arm was numb and useless and his right thigh was sore and bleeding; then, to his surprise, he found the top of his rifle and bayonet had disappeared, having evidently been hit by a piece of shell. German helmets were favourite souvenirs—"they fetch about fifty francs here." One trooper was seen with a broken arm, but with the hand of the other he hung on like grim death to a helmet.

DEATH OF LIEUTENANT-COLONEL DEACON.

There was general regret that Lieut.-Colonel Deacon was reported missing and many of the letters home of members of the Regiment testified in warm terms of the respect and esteem

Digitized by Google

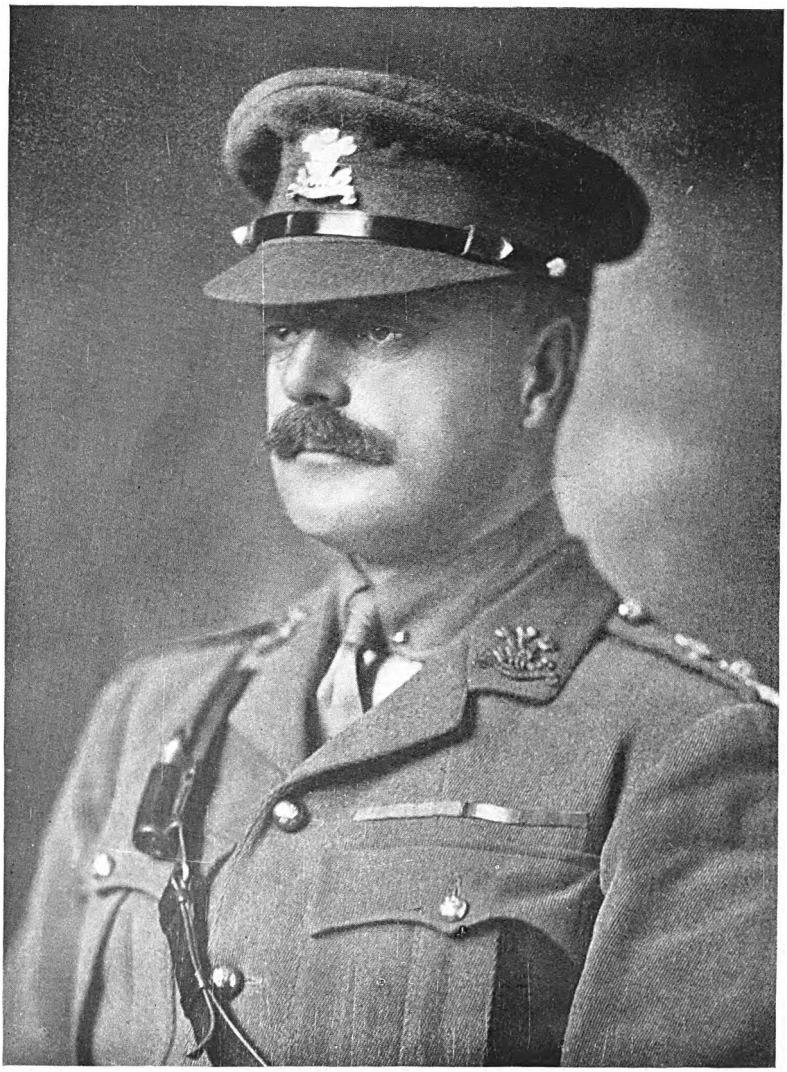
in which he was held. The manner of his end no man knows. He led the charge across the death-scarred slope of a thousand yards and reached the German trench. He sent the Adjutant (Captain A. R. Steele) to the right to direct the firing, which had become wild, and when that officer returned in about a quarter of an hour the Colonel had gone on and he saw him no more. Trooper Jack Mills, of Dunmow, wrote that as they began to climb over the parapet the Colonel and several others fell back dead, whilst Trooper T. D. Harvey, of the Clacton troop, was apparently the last man who spoke to him alive—" I do not know if our Colonel survived. I was close by him all the way until I was hit. I asked him to bandage me so that I could go on, but I understood him to say that he was hit also. He was able to get into the trench and that was the last I saw of him." There was hope that he had been taken prisoner and a report obtained currency some weeks later that he was, indeed, alive in Germany. The rumour was, unhappily, untrue and the gallant leader of the Essex Yeomanry was presumed killed, the body not having been recovered. A warm tribute is that of an officer serving with him in the Regiment. " His coolness prior to the attack made a deep and lasting impression on my own mind and doubtless on those of all ranks, and the success of the attack was due in very large part to the example of his own personal courage." Five years later Colonel Deacon's charger, " Option," was safely returned to Mrs. Deacon. It had been taken over by General Briggs, an old comrade of the Colonel's in the King's Dragoon Guards, and went with that officer to Salonika in 1915, and thence to South Russia.

In addition to Lieut.-Colonel Deacon, four other officers were killed—Major A. Roddick (Upshire Hall, Waltham Abbey), Lieutenants G. P. N. Reid (in command of the machine gun section) (Feering Bury), A. G. Swire (Hillingdon, Harlow) and G. S. Johnston (Gilston, Herts.). Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore pays eloquent tribute to the fallen in his book, " The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and the Essex Yeomanry during the European War ": " Lieut.-Colonel Deacon's courage, cheerfulness and unselfish character will always be remembered, and his valuable presence as commanding officer will always be mourned by his devoted followers. Major Roddick's cool, level-headed leadership of men was an example to follow, and the respect which he commanded by every man of his squadron might well be the envy of every soldier. Lieutenants Reid, Swire and Johnston will ever be remembered as the right sort to give confidence to their men—always cheerful, never idle. The Regiment suffered no less in other ranks than it did in officers. Many valuable lives of N.C.O's. and men, if they had been spared, would indeed have been assets to the interests of their Regiment in the battles to follow."

Warm commendations came from those in high command. The special order of the brigade commander stated that the

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



LIEUT.-COLONEL F. H. D. C. WHITMORE, C.M.G., D.S.O., who commanded the Essex Yeomanry from September, 1915, to April, 1918. From the latter month to the close of the war he commanded the 10th Royal Hussars.

Digitized by Google

counter-attack had undoubtedly saved the situation—" Had the Germans attained their object, the position of the whole of the 27th Infantry Division on the right would have been rendered very precarious. As it was, the Germans retired so great a distance that we were enabled to establish an unbroken line during the night unmolested." G.O.C. Second Army expressed his appreciation of the magnificent spirit shown by the troops and telegraphed his admiration and congratulations on the gallant stand to the Commander of the V Corps. The proudest day of all, however, was on June 18th, when the Cavalry Division paraded before Sir John (later Earl) French, the British Commander-in-Chief, at La Belle Hôtesse, to receive personally his thanks for their service—" You were placed in a very hot corner, where, owing to continuous shelling by the enemy, it was impossible to secure adequate cover. By your steadfast bearing in that terrible position you have all—every regiment—added fresh lustre and still greater honour to the magnificent records you already possess. This is what I want you to remember when you think of the losses you suffered. You had some terrible experiences up there, but every regiment has covered its banner with distinction and glory."

What better tribute could there be, however, than that of Major Ruggles-Brise—" The courage of the men absolutely amazed me and is the one happy recollection of that fight. . . . The memory of their bravery will always be with me and has given me more faith in the Yeoman than I could ever have attained in my wildest dreams."

The losses of the 8th Cavalry Brigade were so severe that it was temporarily amalgamated with the 6th Cavalry Brigade. Thirty-one officers and 357 other ranks were returned as casualties, the heaviest toll being taken of the Yeomanry—10 officers and 151 other ranks. Officers—killed, 5; wounded, 5; Other ranks—killed, 65; wounded, 86. The Royal Horse Guards had 11 officers and 78 other ranks killed, wounded and missing, and the 10th Hussars 10 officers and 128 other ranks. The dead included Lieut.-Colonel E. R. A. Shearman. This exploit won many honours for the Essex Yeomanry, including the D.S.O. for Major A. Buxton and the M.C. for Captain Ruggles-Brise.

LIEUT.-COLONEL F. H. D. C. WHITMORE TAKES COMMAND.

At 9 p.m. on May 14th the remains of the Regiment marched back close to Vlamertinghe. It was a most trying experience, for the men were exhausted and upon the road was a solid mass of troops, lorries, G.S. and limber wagons moving up to the line. The Yeomanry were placed in reserve and at this time Lieut. Meyer was appointed acting Adjutant. They returned to their horses at Mt. Croquet on May 21st, but on the 29th a dismounted party was again sent up to the battle area. The Royal Horse

Digitized by Google

Guards and the 10th Hussars went back to the trenches near Hooge, whilst the Yeomanry were in reserve upon the ramparts, under Major Anthony Buxton, with a total strength of 149. It was whilst so employed that, on May 31st, Major H. F. Wickham, of the 1st (King's) Dragoon Guards, assumed command. A large draft arrived in June and all through the month of roses the Yeomen were busily engaged in training, mainly at Blaringhem, a district of remarkable fertility. The magnificent crops much impressed the Regiment, which was largely composed of practical farmers. The same routine marked the months of July and August. The greater part of the latter month and of September was spent at Matringhem, in the Bomy area, and it was there Lieut.-Colonel Wickham relinquished command upon taking over the 10th Hussars, and Major F. Whitmore became Lieut.-Colonel of the Essex Yeomanry. The former, in his farewell order, paid handsome tribute to the Regiment. He thanked all ranks for the support they had given him and added: "Owing to the large draft received in June to fill the heavy casualties of the 13th of May, the work of re-training has been hard and continuous for everyone. The C.O's. task, however, of reorganizing and re-training the Regiment has been very greatly simplified by the keenness and willingness on the part of the N.C.O's. and men to learn and to carry out his wishes; and, further, this keenness has made it a great pleasure to him to impart what instruction he has been able to do. He desires to take this opportunity of wishing the Regiment the best of luck during the remainder of the campaign and an early opportunity of further distinguishing itself and adding fresh honours to those which it has already gained." Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore's first regimental order appreciatively referred to the work which Lieut.-Colonel Wickham had been able to do: "His untiring energy in reorganizing and re-training the Regiment after the unfortunate event of 13th May will take a prominent part in the records of the Essex Yeomanry. The Regiment conveys to Lieut.-Colonel Wickham its best wishes in his new command and it is a matter of entire satisfaction that he is to remain as on of the the regimental commanding officers of the Brigade." Lieut.-Colonel Wickham had worked the Regiment during the period of re-training harder than ever before, yet had won unbounded popularity and the confidence of all, for his brilliant abilities as a cavalry leader impressed everyone. His command synchronized with the time when the fields had been cleared of the harvest and it was possible to ride across country without hindrance. None who took part in the interesting tactical schemes he devised will ever forget them, but naturally the regiment were delighted to have an Essex Yeoman as commanding officer, and Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore had a great welcome on taking over on September 10th.

Digitized by Google

An incident at this period is still remembered with pleasure by those who shared therein. "Our squadron," wrote an officer, "was ordered to practise getting men, horses, saddles, rifles, etc., across a stream where there was no boat to assist. The stream chosen was the canal at La Nieppe and, to my horror, the C.O., the Corps Commander, the Divisional General and innumerable 'red-hats' turned up to watch us. Of course, such an audience exercised their usual paralysing effect on the men. However, things did not go too badly. A circular endless rope had been made, which stretched across the stream, and horses were being tied to it on one bank, swum across and pulled ashore on the other bank. Suddenly the Corps Commander enquired what knot was being used to tie the horses to the rope, and went round to inspect. Apparently it was an unsuitable knot and he showed us what was the correct one. The new knot was duly employed, but out of the next 15 horses sent across, seven of the knots could not be untied and the ropes had to be cut. Previously not a rope had been cut! The joy of the men was unbounded. Of course, the morning was a huge success! All ranks went home absolutely happy; as happy as if they had been told they were to have a week's leave. They were right and the Corps Commander wrong. Nothing else was talked of in the Squadron for several weeks."

FOX-HUNT AT DAWN.

The squadrons were returning independently after a night operation near Fruges, in the Pas de Calais, in the early morning of September 18th, when a fox was seen by "B" Squadron crossing the plain. A most exciting chase ensued. Leaving an officer in charge of the men and horses, the remaining officers galloped after the animal until it was lost to sight in a valley. Scouts well out in front sighted it again and turned it towards the main body. "The hunt became general and the pandemonium and excitement rose to fever pitch. Bewildered and tired of the size of the pack, the fox lay down in a field of beans."[1] Lieut. J. Swire, springing from the saddle, seized it by the scruff of the neck and restored it to liberty after it had recovered from its exhaustion. Major Buxton, in his book, states that the absence of fences in most parts of Northern France made it possible in September and October for him to enjoy galloping down hares and partridges without the assistance of dogs, a form of sport at that time entirely new to him. "In wet weather, except in the devastated area, too much harm was caused to crops, so that the early autumn was the cream of the season. Moreover, it was almost impossible to catch a partridge by this means after October and very difficult after September." This

1. p. 54. "Sport in Peace and War." (*Buxton*).

Digitized by Google

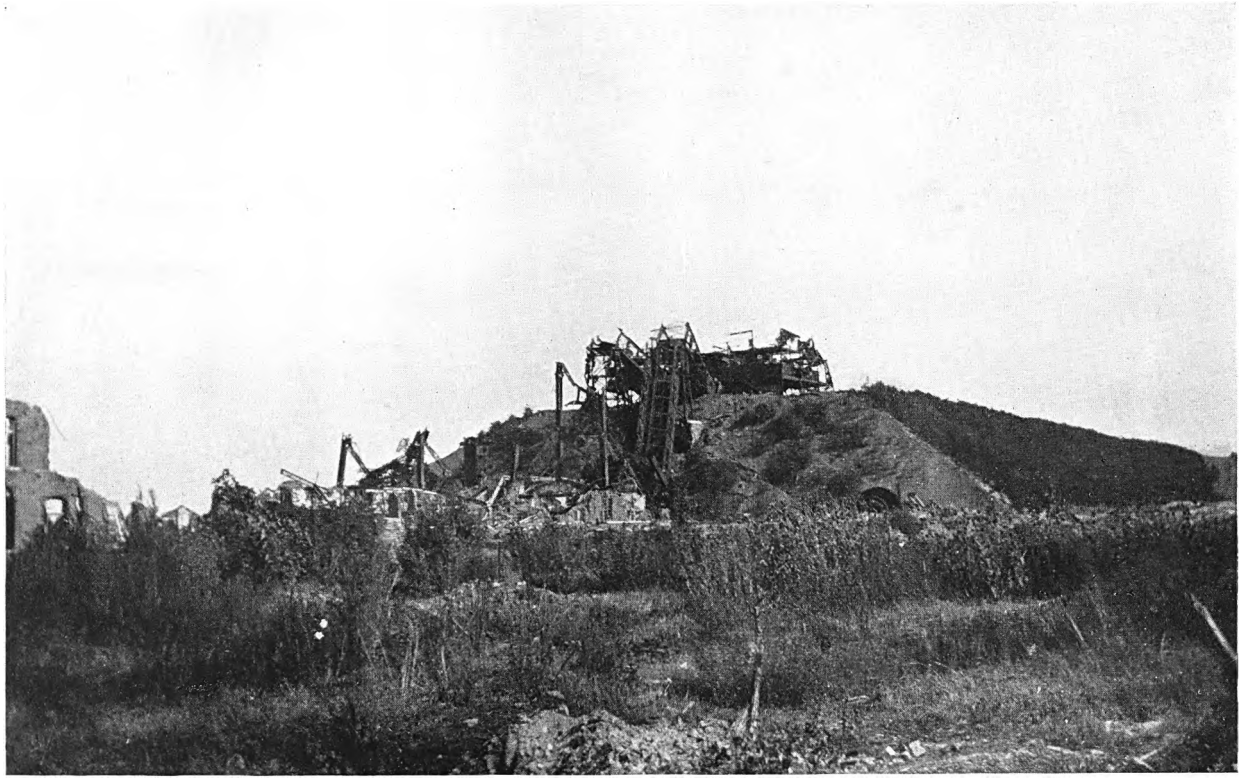
keen sportsman also tells of a great gallop by four officers after a very strong hare which took place in rising country near Fruges. "Finally we drew right up to her. She dodged into a little round hollow and there squatted just short of an osier bed, which meant safety if she could reach it. We put her up and tried to force her again to the open country, but a hare when her mind is made up is an impossible animal to head, and, dodging under our horses' legs, she reached the osier bed. I hurled myself off and dashed after her on foot, but she could still go about as fast as a man in field boots could run, and she was finally lost sight of in the covert from which we could never put her up again." He also graphically tells the story of another chase after a hare in the same district which ended in a mongrel in charge of a peasant boy seizing the spoils of the chase just as the huntsmen rode up. "After removing its head as a proof to the mess of our success, we presented the corpse to the boy, open-mouthed in bewilderment at the two English officers who had thought it worth while to gallop for miles after a hare, make absurd noises at its death and then, when their object was accomplished, ride away with nothing in their pockets but its head."

THE BATTLE OF LOOS.

This was the last incident of note before the Regiment was on the move again—this time for the Loos area, where Lord French's final great attack began on September 25th and lasted until October 15th. On September 21st the Division marched through Pernes and Marles-les-Mines to Bois des Dames, Lapugnoy, where the 6th and 8th Cavalry Brigades were attached for the time being to the First Army. "I well remember the scene on September 22nd," wrote an officer. "We were encamped in a wood, the Bois des Dames. It was a most picturesque sight—the horses tethered in lines in the wood and the men sitting about outside their 'bivvies' made of waterproof sheets. There was a great sing-song in the evening and it would have seemed a glorious picnic had we not been reminded of war's realities by the ceaseless thunder of the heaviest bombardment we had yet heard." By September 25th the Yeomanry were well within the fighting area, having arrived at Philosophe, near Vermelles, amid the thunder of the English guns and the roads crowded with wounded and prisoners. The Brigade bivouacked in a field in the pouring rain, with no shelter for cooking, the regimental headquarters being in an empty house.

The Battle of Loos was part of a great autumn campaign carried out under the direction of Joffre, which proved, on the whole, a disappointment. The French made some progress in Champagne, but failed once more to take Vimy Ridge, whilst the British First Army, which attacked between the La Bassée Canal and Lens, in conjunction with an unsuccessful secondary

Digitized by Google



The Double Pylon at Loos, 1918.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

British attack to the north of the Canal and demonstrations on the front near Armentières, were able to seize Loos and create a salient there, though further progress proved impossible. A feature of the attack was the use of gas instead of a violent preliminary bombardment.

Whilst at Noyelles-lès-Vermelles orders came on September 26th for the Brigade to take over the old German line pending the arrival of the Guards Division. "I well remember that morning," wrote a squadron commander. "We were aroused at 3 a.m. with orders to saddle up and be ready to move at once. At 5.30 there was an officers' 'pow-wow.' We were told the position was critical and we might be needed at any moment for a dismounted counter-attack. In that case we must not bother about little things like 100 per cent. casualties! At the time it was raining steadily and the officers of our squadron had spent the night on a stone floor trying, without much success, to sleep; so, in view of the time, the weather and our breakfastless condition, it is not surprising the proposition was not received with vocal enthusiasm. However, as events proved, we spent most of the day in the most common of all military manœuvres, viz., 'waiting'." The horses were moved back 1,000 yards and at 6 p.m. the dismounted cavalry went forward, only to find that the Guards had already taken possession and they were not needed. They reached their former bivouac at 9 p.m. And the story runs that the officers of one squadron, with a reputation as connoisseurs of the table, met for their evening meal with appetites stimulated by the prospect of two nicely roasted fowls which had been recently received from the homeland. An unpleasant odour was noticed before soup was served, but it was disregarded as one of the inconveniences of active service which occurred when dead Germans lay around, and with whetted appetites the officers awaited the succulent birds. The squadron leader, full of pleasant anticipation, was first to be helped to a generous portion, but the first mouthful proved too much for him. The explanation of the strange odour was instantly revealed and three days passed ere the pain of that revelation completely went from him. The chickens were in an advanced state of decay.

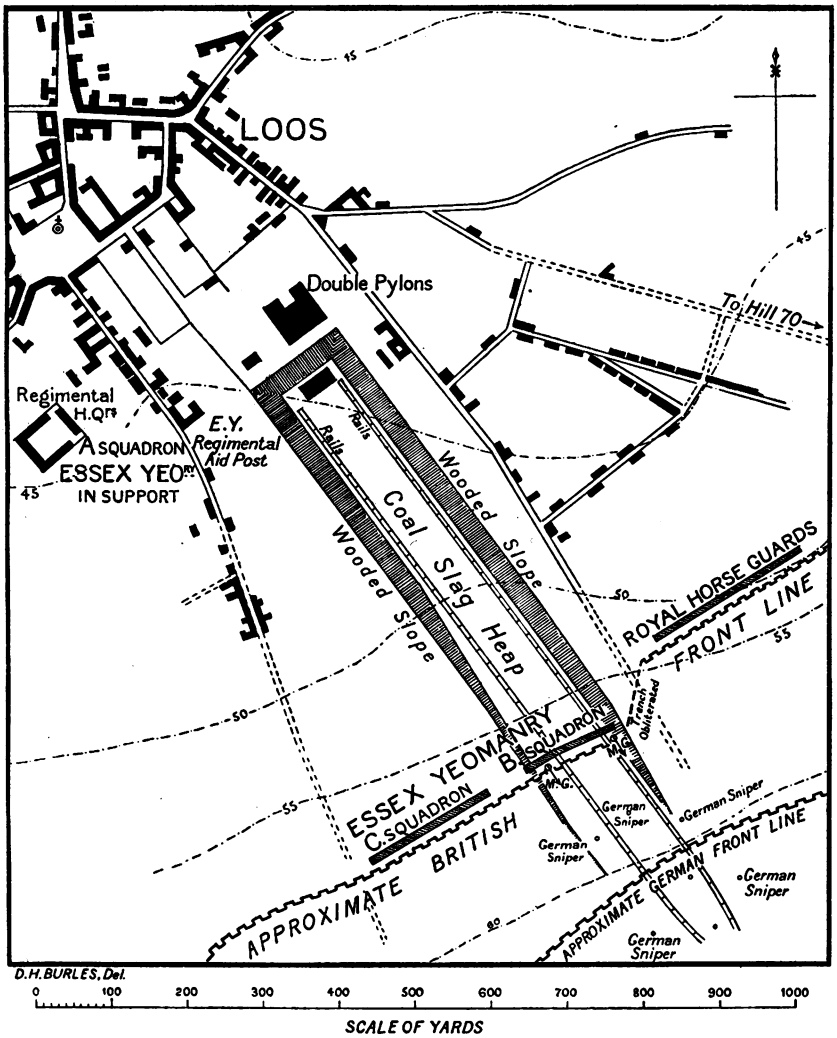
The Regiment was not left long at rest, for at 1 a.m. on September 27th, the Brigade was ordered to move to Loos at once, the Essex Yeomanry acting as advance guard upon the march. The 6th Cavalry Brigade were holding the southern and eastern outskirts of the town, the position occupied by the 3rd Dragoon Guards, extending from the edge of the slag heap to the double pylon, being of particular interest to the Essex Yeomanry, for that was the section of the line which they had to hold after relief of the outgoing regiment. The exchange was hurriedly made and dawn was well advanced before it was complete. "C" Squadron

Digitized by Google

(Captain R. G. Proby), on the right, had its right flank against the chalkpit at the south-eastern exit of Loos, in touch with the 20th Division, whilst "B" Squadron (Captain E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C.) was on the left astride the slag heap, with three machine guns, having the Blues upon its left. "A" Squadron (Major Eustace Hill) and the regimental headquarters were in the well-known Garden City on the south-eastern outskirts of Loos, the houses of which were rapidly utilized for purposes of defence, the walls being loop-holed. Shelling by the enemy was uninterrupted and, in addition to anxiety caused by the obscure situation, water was not to be had, the well from which it was drawn being under enemy observation. The machine guns of the Regiment (under Lieut. Preston) covered with flanking and overhead fire a gallant attack during the afternoon by the Guards Division in the neighbourhood of Hill 70, during which the Germans bombarded the whole of the sector occupied by the Essex Yeomanry, causing several casualties. Some relief from enemy pressure was obtained next day, for infantry captured the the high ground overlooking the Garden City. Communication was established by trench and telephone. The shelling was still intense, however, and in addition to the losses in the Brigade the situation was made more difficult by the staff of the dressing station being bombarded and put out of action. "There were gruesome sights in Loos, too. In one house a party of Germans were still in a sitting position around a table, all quite dead."

"That day at Loos, September 27th," wrote Major Ruggles-Brise, "always remains in my mind as one of the most uncomfortable of the whole war. My squadron ('B') was ordered to relieve the 3rd Dragoon Guards, who were occupying a very shallow and hastily contrived trench scratched out of the slag and coal-dust astride the slag-heap. Two hundred yards to our rear stood the two great pylons, then a landmark for miles, and, unfortunately, an excellent ranging mark for the enemy's guns. The relief took place just before dawn and the Dragoon Guards came out wearing their gas helmets (the day of the box respirator had not then arrived). Things were fairly quiet for the first hour or two, except for some intermittent shelling, but as it became light the enemy snipers were very active and soon took toll of us, as the shallowness of the trench afforded inadequate cover and the parapet, such as it was, being composed of loose coal dust, did not stop the enemy's bullets. Lieut. Pelly was hit in the wrist and the bullet finally lodged in his shoulder, taking with it a part of his wrist-watch. Corporal Gardiner was badly hit through the lung. Other casualties occurred and owing to the enemy having view of our movements we were not able to remove the stricken until dark, which, apart from the added discomfort to the wounded, also impeded the passage up and down the narrow trench and made the

Digitized by Google



Disposition of Essex Yeomanry at Loos, Sept. 27th and 28th, 1915.
From a Sketch by Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

deepening of it more difficult. The discovery of the enemy snipers became urgent, and we were successful in reducing their energies after a time. One of them we located firing at us from about 60 yards away, cleverly concealed under the dead body of an English soldier, who had fallen in a kneeling position and was supported on his elbows and knees, leaving a space between his body and the ground through which the man was able to operate. I directed Sergeant-Major Howard to deal with him, which he did most effectually, and thereafter we were not so much troubled, as the other snipers were evidently some greater distance away. The shelling became heavier as the day went on and we were obliged to put on our gas helmets owing to lachrymatory shells. I was very uncomfortable in mine and did not discover until I removed it in disgust that instead of holding the end of the mouthpiece in my teeth I had been sucking the directions! A piece of slag projecting from the side of the trench did me a good turn, as it invited me to take a seat just at a moment when a high explosive shell arrived on the parapet. My cap was blown off and lay in the bottom of the trench and I remember looking to see if my head was with it, too. Lieut. Tufnell did excellent work throughout the day and took over the command of the squadron from me at dark. We had a bird's-eye view of the Guards' attack on Hill 70 during the afternoon and the enemy left us meanwhile comparatively in peace." "C" Squadron, on the right, were also troubled with snipers until a successful attack by the 140th Brigade cleared a patch of gorse and scrub on that front.

"There is one incident I well remember the morning after our entry into Loos," wrote another officer. "I had a forage round looking for a few tit-bits to supplement our iron rations and was fortunate in discovering a shop just in the rear of the Garden City. All the stores had been removed, but in the cellar a quantity of rice, cocoa, sugar, etc., had been overlooked, which was quickly commandeered. Further on we found three or four tame rabbits in a hutch and a couple of chickens. These were also 'borrowed' for the occasion. A large stew-pot having been discovered, a fire was quickly lit and it was not long before an excellent stew had been prepared, which only lacked salt to make it perfect. It was much enjoyed by all who partook of it. The only word of criticism came from an irate artillery officer, who was confident that the smoke from our fire would draw the enemy artillery, and even an offer to partake of our savoury stew proved unavailing to silence his complaints! This story brings to mind that of the capture of a Boche prisoner. Spurred by the tales of this excellent stew, three unarmed Yeomen were out on a prowl. They found a tame rabbit, which bolted down a cellar and they followed in hot pursuit. Picture their surprise when they found in the cellar a live German, and, not knowing

Digitized by Google

how many more there were, they hurried back to get their rifles. They raced from the cellar, quickly followed by the German, who, with his hands above his head, was shouting at the top of his voice, 'Kamerade! Kamerade!!' It would have been a glorious scene for any passer by. The Yeomen soon had their rifles and, having made sure there were no others in the cellar, they proudly marched their prisoner away."

In heavy rain the Yeomanry, after dark on September 28th, endeavoured to improve the trenches, but with the chalky soil and with the men almost exhausted progress was slow. Welcome relief came that night by the 1st Infantry Division, the 9th Liverpools replacing the Essex Yeomanry in a rainstorm. The men reached their horses at 3.30 next morning wet through and tired out. There were orders, however, to saddle up at once and ride to Gosnay, which was entered about 10.30 a.m., with the men so exhausted that Major Hill found scarce five per cent of his squadron who were awake; the remainder were asleep on their horses. The billeting area was a sodden field, but the weary Yeomen could not remain out in the open, so, forming up behind the interpreter, the village street was traversed and from one to six men were put into each miner's house, according to the accommodation. Such drastic billeting methods had never been adopted before and a great row was anticipated. Instead there were complaints next morning from those householders who had had no soldiers allotted to them. Orders came on October 1st for a move again, this time to La Beuvrière, then to Hurionville.

A YEOMAN'S EXAMPLE.

Whilst there 2nd Lieut. E. G. Windle arrived on his 61st birthday, eager, in spite of his years, to take over the work of a troop leader. When proceeding upon a course with a brother officer he heard that the post of regimental bombing officer was vacant and immediately made strenuous efforts to obtain the appointment, which at that time was beset with risk to instructors in training areas. On October 19th the Regiment moved back once more to Matringhem, where the regimental headquarters and machine gun section lay, whilst "A" Squadron was at Capelle-sur-la-Lys and Reclinghem, "B" Squadron at Vincly and "C" Squadron at Senlis. The Regiment was in this district until November 17th, and then came a change of scene—headquarters, "A" Squadron and machine gun section in Embry, "B" Squadron in St. Denœux and "C" Squadron in Humbert, the last-named changing to billets in Boubers and Pottier on November 29th. There Christmas was spent and the New Year welcomed. The Regiment suffered grievous loss on October 2nd, when Lieut. C. C. Tower, A.D.C., 12th Division, was killed near Vermelles. He was buried in the Churchyard at Nœux-les-Mines, where, in January, 1916, his brother officers paid respect to his memory by placing a wreath upon his grave.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

8th Machine Gun Squadron (Essex Yeomanry), at Merlimont Plage, 1916-1917. Lieut. W. P. Batters, M.C., in command.

Digitized by Google

1916.

Memorable as were the events of the year 1916 for the British Armies in France, the Essex Yeomanry played no such conspicuous part therein as in 1915, 1917 and 1918. It "stood-to" with the rest of the 3rd Cavalry Division during the opening days of the Battle of the Somme, but otherwise was not actively engaged. Detachments, however, were employed frequently upon extra regimental duty and it is with these parties that interest in the happenings of 1916 mainly lies.

In January the Essex Yeomanry were still at Embry, where incessant training and instruction were undertaken both in cavalry and trench warfare. The regimental signal troop was strengthened and carefully trained by Lieut. F. C. Meyer. The Regiment's stay there was also marked by the general use of the box respirator and the introduction of the Hotchkiss automatic rifle. The machine gun detachment was struck off the strength on March 3rd on the formation of machine gun squadrons as part of the Machine Gun Corps. Each Brigade in Cavalry Corps now possessed its machine gun squadron. For instance, that of the 8th Cavalry Brigade became the 8th Machine Gun Squadron and was composed of detachments from the three regiments of the Brigade. In September, when the Regiment was at Blangy, "B" Squadron won a regimental Hotchkiss gun competition, whilst "C" Squadron led in the Lloyd Lindsay event. The teams from these squadrons were selected to represent the 8th Cavalry Brigade in the competitions of the 3rd Cavalry Division at Tramecourt, near Agincourt, when the Regiment secured second place in both events. The reinforcement of the three Yeomanry regiments in the Division caused some anxiety and on January 6th the commanding officers (Lieut.-Colonel Robinson, Leicestershire Yeomanry, Lieut.-Colonel Backhouse, North Somersetshire Yeomanry, and Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, Essex Yeomanry) left for England to deal with this matter. Six days later two officers and 81 other ranks arrived from Colchester by way of Rouen. On February 14th the first appearance of the regimental military and string band was made at a concert in the school at Embry, the formation and training of which had been undertaken with complete success by R.Q.M.S. Joscelyne. It was only after the serious casualties suffered by the Regiment at Monchy in April, 1917, in which engagement several of the band were killed, that it became impossible to keep it going. At Embry, too, squadron canteens were first started, supplies being replenished from branches of the Expeditionary Force Canteens. This arrangement was of great benefit to the welfare of the squadrons. The first

Digitized by Google

anniversary of the fight at Frezenberg Ridge was also observed at Embry on May 14th, there being a special parade and memorial service. In the competition for the best turned-out troop on May 4th, Dunmow secured first place, with Southend second and Waltham third. There was a brief stay at Agenvillers for divisional training, a specially interesting time, for within a certain area the troops were allowed to ride anywhere—through standing corn, through deep clover, jumping trenches and ditches—which added an unaccustomed reality to the manœuvres. The risk was considerable and six men were killed by accidents during this period of training, though, happily, none were in the Essex Yeomanry.

Before May was out the Yeomanry were back at Embry. The band there gave another concert in the schoolroom, the programme comprising the following items: March, "Laddies in Khaki"; valse, "Dreaming"; cornet solo, "The sunshine of your smile," Lance-Corporal Johnson; selection, "Bric-a-brac"; valse, "Golden Hours"; euphonium solo, "Mystic Isle of the Sea," Lance-Corporal Osborne; valse, "Entrancing"; selection, "Still Smiling," and two-step, "Down in Jungle Town." Early in June there was a comparative holiday near the sea at Cucq, but the Regiment was soon recalled to Embry. The Division had been ordered to support the offensive on the Somme and the brigades accordingly concentrated at Bonnay, the Yeomanry having moved by night marches via Vironchaux and St. Ouen. The last day's march was exceedingly miserable, rain coming down in torrents. As the Regiment passed through Amiens the storm was exceptionally severe and upon arrival at Bonnay it was extremely difficult to find suitable bivouacs, for the camping ground being a swamp, it was for the most part covered with water. A reconnoitring party of officers had an exciting experience on June 29th when on high ground west of Albert. They were looking across the valley, when suddenly, all along the English line for about two miles, clouds of gas poured out and drifted, wave upon wave, slowly towards the German trenches. There was a furious bombardment by the Germans in reply, but no attack took place. From this ridge officers and men used to study the situation, for the English and German trenches were plainly visible. It was a prelude to the First Battle of the Somme. For the first three days of the great attack the Division stood to, but on July 4th orders came for the Regiment to move to Bellifontaine, near Abbeville, and on the 8th it returned at short notice to the battle area, the Yeomanry proceeding by Amiens, halting at Corbie and moving to the Bonnay swamp once again in the early hours of July 9th.

THE DOOMED OUTFIT.

Whilst there, ready at short notice to gallop through the eternally discussed "Gap," a new officer arrived. The quantity of kit which came with him was a source of keen observation and

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"Orsett Hall," the Regimental Headquarters of the Essex Yeomanry at Bonnay, July, 1916.
(So named from the Essex residence of the Commander of the Regiment.)

Digitized by Google

discussion. Whilst his new squadron leader was eyeing the endless luggage with considerable disfavour, the newcomer walked up to him and enquired whether he could send something to the station to fetch his "things." "But what is all this?" gasped the horrified Major. It should be explained that when on the move the maximum weight of kit an officer was allowed to put on a squadron wagon was 30lb., a meagre allowance, but when in a back area there would be frequently some accumulation. It transpired that the new arrival had brought a chest of drawers, washing stand, basin and bucket, bed, blankets and sheets and much else—they must have been worth a fortune to some outfitter's stores. He was passed on to the Quartermaster, through whom he had to arrange for getting rid of this gigantic outfit. All present pined to be present at the interview and hear what that old soldier, who possessed a ready gift of expression, said to the new recruit, but the pleasure was denied. The fate of that outfit they knew not, but it never appeared in camp.

It was at Bonnay that "Orsett Hall" was painted on the house occupied by regimental headquarters and "Bocking Place" on the house opposite, an enquiring cavalryman supposing that the swamp, which was covered with half-dead and badly-formed poplar trees, was Epping Forest! Large digging parties were employed at Contalmaison and then in very hot weather, on August 1st, the Brigade left Bonnay without regret. It marched by the citadel and tow path of the Somme at Amiens, watered at Bertricourt and camped for the night at Hangest-sur-Somme. The next day Drucat was reached and the day after the men slept in the open air at Moulinel, for no billets were available. A pontoon section of the Royal Engineers did their best, however, to make things comfortable by the Authie River. The journey closed on August 5th at Blangy-sur-Ternoise, where the weather was very pleasant and those with piscatorial tastes had merry sport with trout in the river. "The sporting instincts of my squadron," Major Buxton records in "Sport in Peace and War," "were very strong and a procession of real enthusiasts used to follow me round the meadow, spotting for rises and keeping up a running comment on the proceedings. Their keenness was most invigorating, and when a good evening came and six fish of a larger size than usual were landed, their patience was rewarded and their enthusiasm knew no bounds. Blangy was one of our pleasantest billets, not merely because of its trout, seventy odd of which I caught, but because of the very special kindness and welcome given to the officers and men by the owners of the mill, the farm, the school and many others in the village."

After a stay of five weeks there was another change of scene to a camping ground between Querrieu and Bussy-lès-Daours, the 8th Brigade relieving the Canadian Cavalry Brigade and the Essex Yeomanry taking over from Strathcona's Horse on

Digitized by Google

September 14th. There was constant movement for ten days—La Neuville, Vecquemont (where the rain and mud made the bivouacs in "a terrible mess"—horses were standing in one to two feet of mud and it was useless to move the lines owing to continuous rain), Bouchin and I'Etoile, Fillièvres, finally to Aubin St. Vaast, in beautiful weather. "The country around Aubin St. Vaast and Lambus lent itself very well for regimental and brigade schemes. The village of St. Josse, standing out by itself, became renowned for passive resistance, being a constant objective for attack and capture by all and every formation from a troop to a brigade. St. André-au-Bois likewise became well-known from the fact of its being conspicuous for its absence, except on the map, thereby causing everlasting anxiety to parties sent out for the purpose of instruction in map reading."[1] The horses of the whole Regiment were picketed in the corner of a very large grass field, almost flat and with beautiful turf. It was fit to serve as a first-class cricket ground and it seemed sacrilege to tether horses on it and cut it up. However, there were soon four or five football grounds in active use.

The experiences of the Yeomanry in this respect were turned into verse by Sergt. Bulling and became a popular item at concert parties. Sung to the tune of "Little Grey Home in the West," it ran:

When the golden sun sinks in the west,
And you think that your day's work is o'er,
A cyclist comes round with an order he's found,
That the squadron will turn out at four.
It's bound to be pouring with rain,
And so dark that you can't see your hoss,
When you get on parade the announcement is made
That the scheme is to capture St. Josse.

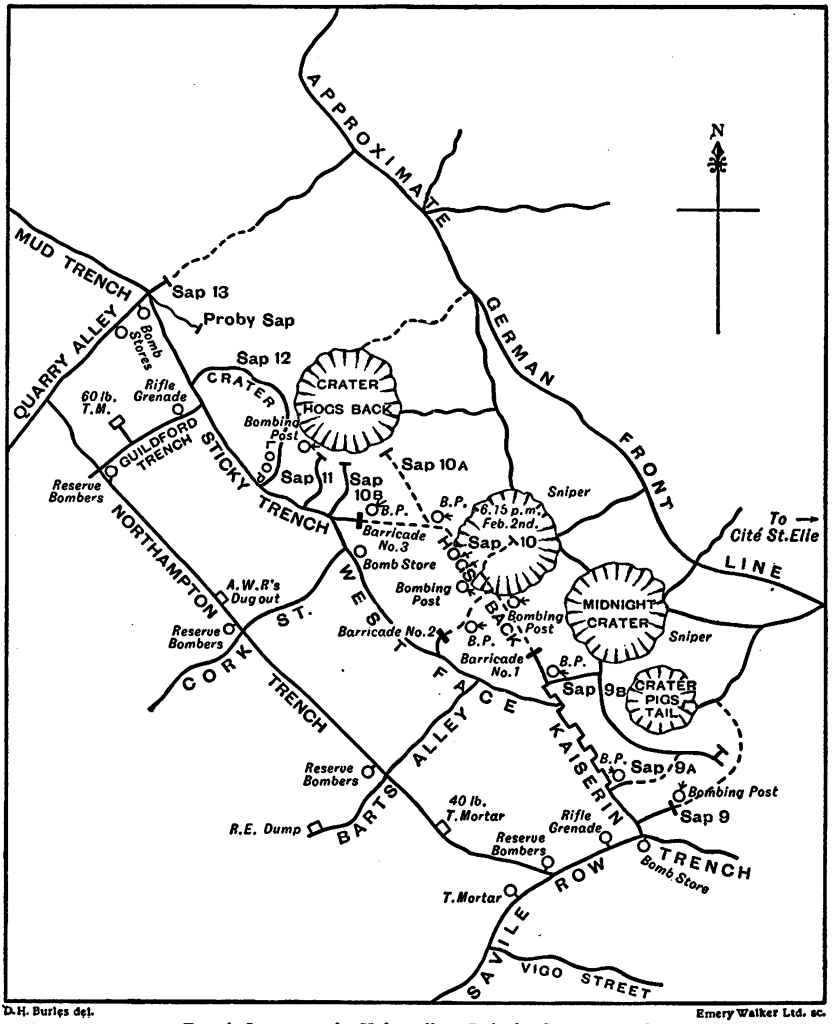
There are hay nets that have to go on,
There are wallets, a brush on the near,
Your neck chains as well, you must burnish like—well,
And your mess-tin strap point to the rear.
Two shackles and pegs you must take,
Your great coat be rolled up quite tight,
And I've told you before that we shan't win this war
If your surcingle buckles aren't bright.

We start off to make our first bound,
It's a way that we've oft been before.
We get to Lambus, then our map-readers cuss,
'Cos they can't find St. André-au-Bois.
We pick up the "Tenth" and the "Blues,"
The rain it is still falling fast,
Then the General says "Damn!!!
"I shall stop where I am,
"You can go back to Aubin St. Vaast."

1. p. 77. "The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War." (*Whitmore*).

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



D.H. Burles del. Emery Walker Ltd. sc.

Trench System at the Hohenzollern Redoubt, January, 1916.
From a Sketch by Major G. Gold.

Digitized by Google

Other incidents at this time were, fortunately, recorded. One trooper, destined to fight at Monchy, wrote: "I was for some time billeted at a farm at Aubin St. Vaast. The family living there comprised the father and mother, a grandmother and three daughters—Suzanne, Albertine and Irene; two sons were at the war. In odd moments I used to help the three girls to thread tobacco leaves; these were put together on strings while yet green and then hung up to dry in sheds and other places."

Sport as well as training was actively pursued. On September 27th an American inter-troop football tournament was won by Waltham Abbey troop, with Southend second and Orsett third, whilst Colchester won premier award for the second elevens. Gastronomic efficiency was also cultivated and the Waltham and Southend troops won first and second places respectively for their skill in this competition. There was keen rivalry in Rugby, but though playing hard matches, the Regiment was not successful. Thus on October 8th the Queen's Bays beat them by 12 points to nil, succeeding again on October 15th by three tries to one. On October 22nd the Artists Rifles were victors by 27 points to nil. Under the Association code, the Regiment was able to draw with the 3rd Cavalry Division Supply Column three goals all. Late in October the regimental headquarters were transferred to Plumoison. Hard work upon a ruined house soon provided a comfortable dwelling for regimental headquarters and in the billeting area generally trouble was taken to improve quarters and stables. On November 23rd the erection of Nissen huts was commenced. An interesting experiment was made on December 13th, when all the horses of a troop of each squadron were shod with rolled toe shoes. A change of quarters came on December 22nd, when the Regiment occupied the billeting area vacated by the 1st Royal Dragoons—the headquarters and half "A" Squadron were at St. Josse; "B" Squadron at Villiers and around Le Moulinel; "C" Squadron at St. Aubin and half "A" Squadron at St. Josse station and Capelle. The 10th Hussars were at Merlimont and the Royal Horse Guards at Rang-du-Fliers. Whilst in this area the weather was extremely cold and when Major-General J. Vaughan, C.B., D.S.O., commanding the 3rd Cavalry Division, inspected the Regiment on the sands at Merlimont Plage it was remembered as one of the coldest days of the whole war, the sea being frozen along the shore.

HOT WORK IN THE HOHENZOLLERN REDOUBT.

There were three important sections of extra regimental duty during the year. The most notable was in the early days. A dismounted division was formed from the Cavalry Corps for service in the trenches, each brigade providing a battalion and each regiment a company of eight officers and 300 other ranks. Each battalion was numbered in accordance with its own

Digitized by Google

numeral as a mounted brigade. Thus the 1st Dismounted Battalion was formed out of the 1st Cavalry Brigade and so on. The sector allotted to the Division was near Vermelles and known as the Hohenzollern Redoubt, the headquarters being at Béthune, then little damaged by shell-fire. On January 3rd the 8th Battalion entrained for Fouquereuil and marched thence to Béthune, being billeted in a girls' school. The next day houses were occupied at Labourse and on January 9th the 1st Battalion was relieved, the 10th Hussars' company being in Kaiserin trench and Hog's Back; the Royal Horse Guards on the left in Sticky and Mud Trenches, and the Essex Yeomanry in support in Railway Reserve Trench. There was much enemy liveliness at night with rifle grenades and trench mortars. The Battalion was relieved by the 7th Battalion on January 13th and went into reserve at Sailly-Labourse. It was not in the line again until January 21st, when the same sector was occupied as before, with the 10th Hussars on the right, Yeomanry on the left and Royal Horse Guards in reserve. There was constant bickering with the enemy.

On January 25th the 6th Cavalry Battalion had their front line trenches badly knocked about and, in consequence, the bombers of the 8th Cavalry Battalion, under Lieut. Back, Royal Horse Guards, were sent forward as reinforcement. The two N.C.O.'s of the party were Lance-Corporal Perkins, of Dunmow troop, Essex Yeomanry, and Lance-Corporal Cook, of Epping troop, Essex Yeomanry. The latter, with a party of three, which included Private Law, of Stortford troop, Essex Yeomanry, was posted at a saphead with rifle grenades, when both men were buried by high explosive shells, which destroyed the trench they were holding. The two Yeomen were entombed for a minute or two, when, fortunately, another shell burst against them and Lance-Corporal Cook was partly exposed again, one shoulder being out of the ground. He was thus able to extricate himself and dig out Law. A party from the Royals then came up and the situation was restored, Cook and Law being taken to the casualty clearing station.

Relieved the same night, the Battalion had only just gone into reserve, when heavy enemy shelling caused a warning order to be issued, the Yeomanry Company being moved in close support of the 6th Battalion. The situation eased next day and the 8th Battalion returned to its billets in Sailly-Labourse.

The headquarters staff was changed at intervals, each regimental commanding officer in the brigade taking turns of duty. On January 31st Lieut.-Colonel F. Whitmore took charge of the 8th Battalion, with Major G. Gold second-in-command. Colonel Whitmore, however, went into hospital at Béthune and Lieut.-Colonel H. F. Wickham, 10th Hussars, was recalled. The Germans exploded a mine at 6.15 p.m. on February 2nd under sap 10 in the Hog's Back and a party of 8th Battalion bombers and diggers

Digitized by Google

occupied the crater two hours later. Orders came to clear the front line near Westface and Kaiserin trenches, and also the saps thereabouts in readiness for a retaliatory mine explosion in the German line near Pigstail Crater. The hour fixed for the effort was 11 p.m., but a delay occurred owing to the attempt which was being made to rescue a patrol of the Royal Horse Guards who were buried alive in the first explosion and suffered a loss of one killed and one wounded. At 12.5 a.m. the mine was fired, but did more damage to the British trenches than to those of the Germans. Parts of the Westface and Kaiserin trenches, with saps, were destroyed and also part of Northampton (support) trench, occupied by the Yeomanry Company, seven men of the latter being buried alive and one killed. The position was full of anxiety. The Battalion bombers, under Lieut. S. C. Deed, X.R.H., sought to reoccupy the front line positions, but were stopped by the debris and could only reach an old trench in rear of Pigstail. The Germans bombed the Kaiserin trench and Lieut. Deed's party, having exhausted their supply, had to retire to Westface, nearer Savile Row. They barricaded the end of the smashed trench and held it with bombers and Maxim guns. The Germans retired before daylight and by 6.15 a.m. the crater was reoccupied and work was busily in progress to restore the old position.

Several Essex Yeomen were noted for gallant conduct upon this occasion. Three (Wear, Waugh and Grant) were mentioned as doing good work on patrol. A private of the Regiment was the first man in the German crater after the mine went up, and he remained there under very heavy fire in an exposed sap. Another held an advanced position ; he had no bombs left and was wounded in both legs, but he refused to be carried away and defended the sap with his rifle against the German bombers, who were quite close to him. " The Germans first exploded a mine at 6.15 p.m." wrote an officer, " but, luckily, the crater was very well and quickly occupied and consolidated by the Blues' bombers and when the enemy arrived he was bombed off. At 8.15 p.m. a mine was put up in the next sector to ours and at 10.30 notice came that another was going up in our sector. This was delayed, as a patrol of the Blues had been caught in the first explosion and buried and they were trying to get them out. At midnight the mine went up and did a lot of damage to our front line, completely blocking about fifty yards of trench and our sapheads and positions in our two craters which we had been occupying. This upset all arrangements, as the bombers could not get on quickly enough and, in addition, their advanced bombing stores had been buried. The mine was expected to explode close to, if not under, the Boche line. As a matter of fact, it did so, I think, but the effect was a good deal greater than the miners expected. The result was the enemy got to his edge of the crater first and came round the corner and gave our trench a tremendous bombing, but luckily into the blown-up portion, where no one was. When our

Digitized by Google

supply of bombs had been reorganized our men got going again, but did not make much headway, eventually putting a barricade across each end of our broken trench. Private Rolph, of the Essex Yeomanry, stood at a barricade for over three hours throwing bombs until eventually he was wounded. Bombing went on until nearly dawn, when the Boche withdrew. I don't think they had any idea of attack, but they were simply covering their working parties, as we ought to have been doing. Anyhow, at dawn the position was the same as before and a lot of the damaged trench was repaired." The dismounted division was relieved by the 12th Division after six weeks in the trenches.

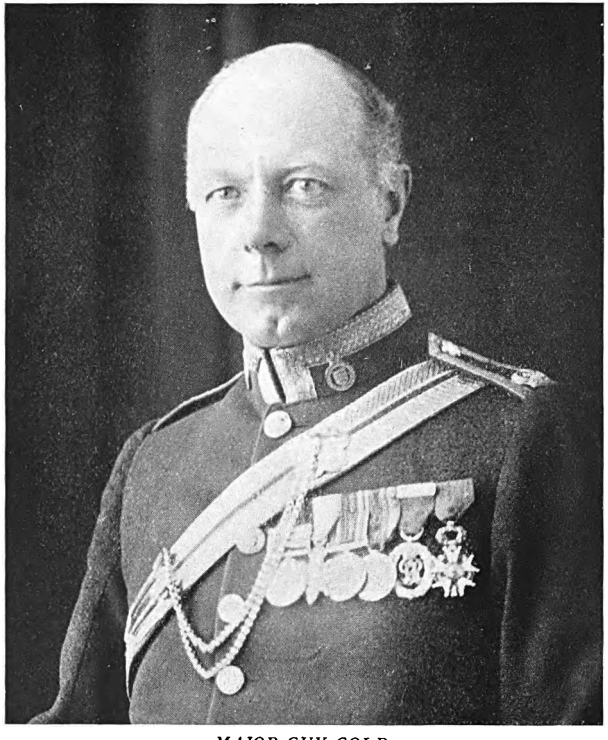
One story of this period is worthy of recall. It was time to stand-to at dawn, about 7 a.m., and a new subaltern, rather anxious, had taken charge of a sector. He was standing by a sentry and said eagerly, "Can you see anything? Can you see anything?" "Only a few dead Germans," said the sentry, imperturbably, staring into the darkness. "How do you know they are dead?" snapped the officer. "Well, they've been lying there a week and I ain't seen anyone bring them any rations yet," replied the unmoved sentry.

Whilst at Blangy, on August 12th, a dismounted party was formed, consisting of two officers and 60 other ranks from each regiment of the Division, with Lieut.-Colonel F. Whitmore in command. It consisted of 1st Life Guards, 2nd Life Guards, Royal Horse Guards, Royals, 3rd Dragoon Guards, 10th Royal Hussars, Leicestershire Yeomanry, North Somerset Yeomanry and Essex Yeomanry and was employed in laying an underground cable from the Usna redoubts, near Albert, to Ovillers-la-Boisselle. Although the work was undertaken in the early hours of the morning the party did not escape observation by the enemy's balloons and they were frequently shelled. The task completed, the detachment returned to the Division, but it was not long before further work of a similar nature was required with the Fifth Army. From November 1st till the 11th the 3rd Cavalry Division had a dismounted party, under Major G. Gold, at Bouzincourt, working on a light railway that was being laid from Ovillers towards Mouquet Farm, near Thiépval.

In October another working party was despatched to Aveluy to assist in clearing up the Somme battlefield. Arms and material of all kinds were collected in enormous quantities at various dumps, from which they were despatched to the base and there re-conditioned. The saddest part of the task was burying the fallen, who lay in great numbers over a wide area, pay books, identity discs, etc., being collected and forwarded to the Record Office. The work was carried on under persistent shell-fire and the party, which was at first billeted in the village of Aveluy, had to be moved back some two miles to a safer situation owing to the casualties sustained.

Other troubles were not lacking. One of the troopers

Digitized by Google



MAJOR GUY GOLD.

MAJOR J. O. PARKER, Croix de Guerre.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

subsequently wrote home: "Rats? What do *you* think! I was at a village when our little lot slept in a shed for the night. The place was infested by beauties; not only youngsters, but grey-coated grandfathers, old in theft and wickedness of all sorts. When you laid down your head one, two, ten, a score of them came out to hold an inspection of your kit, after which there was platoon drill among the straw; then one would do sentry-go across your feet. Presently he would give an alarm and the whole lot scurried off in a funk. But they soon came back, stiffened with reinforcements. We had a corporal who was afraid of nothing in this world; he was a fine blacksmith, and would smile when shoeing a horse known to be able to kick out a man's eye-teeth first try. But that corporal couldn't stand rats at any price, and when, that night, he heard them getting together for the muster the game was up. No sleep for him. He took his rifle and bayonet into a corner and there he sat, tailor fashion, ready to prod any rat coming too near. He sat there all night, and never got a wink of sleep."

Later in November the 8th Cavalry Brigade Pioneer Battalion was made up of eight officers and 260 other ranks from each regiment. This unit was commanded in turn by senior officers of different regiments, Major A. Buxton being among those so employed.

At first the work consisted of repairs to roads in the neighbourhood of Beaumont-Hamel and Acheux. Later the Yeomen were employed in revetting and improving the front line trenches near Hébuterne and Beaumont-Hamel, which were in a terrible state. Mud was up to the knees and it was not unusual to have men stuck in the mud who had to be hauled out. Sometimes there was heavy shelling, but for the most part it was a quiet part of the line. During this period the Essex Yeomanry were attached to a battalion of the King's Own Yorkshire Light Infantry, who showed great kindness and consideration to the Regiment. Whilst on duty with this party Lieut. E. J. Sayer, the popular and efficient Quartermaster, was blown up by a stray shell in the back area and though not wounded, he suffered seriously from shock and concussion and he did not fully recover for many months. The Battalion returned to the Brigade on December 21st.

The month of January, 1917, was spent in the Merlimont and St. Josse areas. There were constant exercises and experimental training, the latter including demonstrations of long range searching fire north of Berck and of covering fire on the sand between Merlimont and Paris-Plage. Officers were continually posted to courses of instruction during the winter of 1916-17 and the results achieved in three of the classes showed that the Essex Yeomanry easily held their own with their brethren of the regular regiments. In the first course the Essex Yeomanry were second with 1,958 marks, second again in the next course with 2,236 marks

Digitized by Google

and would have been well placed in the third course had not two of the officers been sent to hospital during their term of instruction. On February 1st, when the Regiment moved to Fressin, a working party was despatched to Doullens, where a fresh task awaited, none other than the building of an embankment for a railway which was to facilitate the movement of troops in the coming battle in the Arras area. The return journey was memorable. A thaw had set in after one of the coldest winters known in France for many years and the roads were almost impassable. The motor 'buses continually sank up to their axles and the men had constantly to get out and walk to a firmer stretch. Small box respirators were issued to the Regiment in March and there was also training in aeroplane contact patrol.

PIGHUNTING AT FRESSIN.

The time at Fressin proved exciting, but not in warlike experience. The Yeomen had many a joyful adventure in pig-sticking, particularly "C" Squadron, commanded by Major A. Buxton, D.S.O. During February and March this squadron bagged nine pig, six with the rifle and three with the sword, the latter the trophies of Lieut. G. Wear, Lance-Corporal Rowell and Private Hill. The first-named was only able to kill his boar after a hand to hand fight which finished in an overgrown ditch. Several of these spirited combats are described by Major Buxton in his own book, "Sport in Peace and War," and in Colonel Whitmore's volume. "Few travellers from London to Paris," says the Major, "are aware that soon after leaving Boulogne when passing near the sandhills by the side of a swamp they are invading the haunt of the wild boar. We learnt many things at the war, and that was one of them. I shall always be grateful to the Germans for driving before them, as they undoubtedly did in 1914, a large number of pig, which, owing to the subsequent construction of trenches, remained to provide sport on our side of the line."

On one occasion the squadron were practising shooting at iron plates across a valley west of Wambercourt, between the woods of Hesdin and Fressin, the plates being fixed at the foot of a steep bank. Sergeant Baynes and Corporal Pennal were placed about two hundred yards away on either flank to warn civilians of the danger. The first squad had just fired and the iron plates had been re-erected, when Sergeant Baynes commenced whistling quietly. Major Buxton stopped the shooting, thinking civilians were passing, but the sergeant continued whistling, also pointing with his hand. At that very moment five pig—an old sow and four young, all more than half-grown—came over the bank and galloped straight towards the firing point, knocking two of the targets down as they came. The waiting squad opened fire and the last of the pig was hit, being finished off by Corporal Smith with a

Digitized by Google

second shot. The rest of the pig still rushed forward and then the mother went down with a shot through the heart. For a moment the survivors were protected by a sunk lane, but reappeared again sixty yards away, when another fell victim. The other two turned half right, but would have doubtless shared the fate of the others had not a hapless civilian appeared in the line of fire. It is not surprising that thereafter a squadron standing order insisted that one eye in all ranks must be ever open for pig. The second episode proved even more exciting. Major Buxton thus describes it : " I was by the Wambercourt-Lebiez road on the Lebiez side of the dip, where the road passes a narrow strip of wood running from the Bois de Fressin and the Bois de Lebiez. Three troops were manœuvring on the high ground on the Lebiez side of the dip. I was going across from them to the Stortford troop, which was dismounted at the edge of the strip of wood, when Corporal Pennal galloped across from the high ground to me and told me that he had just seen five pig cross along the crest on the Wambercourt side of the wood, going parallel with it towards the Bois de Fressin. There was not a moment to spare, because they only had a mile to go before reaching the Bois de Fressin, where they would be in safety. I shouted to Lieut. Chaplin to mount the Stortford troop under Lieut. Wear and to gallop the troop down the strip towards the Bois de Fressin and by doing so to head the pig back on to the plateau between the strip and the Bois de Sart. I waved to the three troops to rally on me and we followed the Stortford troop down the strip at a distance of about 300 yards. Someone viewed the pig in the open as the three troops crashed out into the open, a hundred yards short of the Bois de Fressin. On the top of the hill was Lieut. Chaplin disappearing over the sky-line, holding up his cap, screaming his soul out. As he and the Stortford troop came out of the strip they had headed the pig in the very nick of time and turned them into the plain. That, I think, was my best moment in the war. At the head of the three troops I galloped up to the top of the hill, the men extending as we went ; as we reached the top there were the pig wondering what to do in the middle of the plain. We drew swords and went straight for them, pack ponies, Hotchkiss and all. Lieut. R. C. Weatherby came out with his Dunmow troop from the strip last, not quite knowing what was up, but, guessing the best, seeing the hunt and bearing right-handed, shot up the side of the strip and cut right in at the head of the chase. The pig divided as we got close to them, two turning for the Bois de Sart, pursued by Captain J. O. Parker, Lieut. G. Horsfall and two or three others. These two pig just saved their lives in the wood. The remaining three bore back, pursued by the rest of us towards the strip, near the edge of which was a single strand of barbed wire, under which two of them slipped and escaped. The other continued and Lance-Corporal Rowell, galloping clear of his troop,

Digitized by Google

struck him about ten yards from the edge of the strip. All three—man, horse and pig—rolled over together. Corporal Rowell was first up and finished the pig on foot with his sword. Nobody took any interest in the horse, which got up about ten minutes later unhurt. In the afternoon I took M. le Maire to the scene of operations and settled the damage to wheat, including his own and everybody else's, at five francs and a ham of the boar."[1]

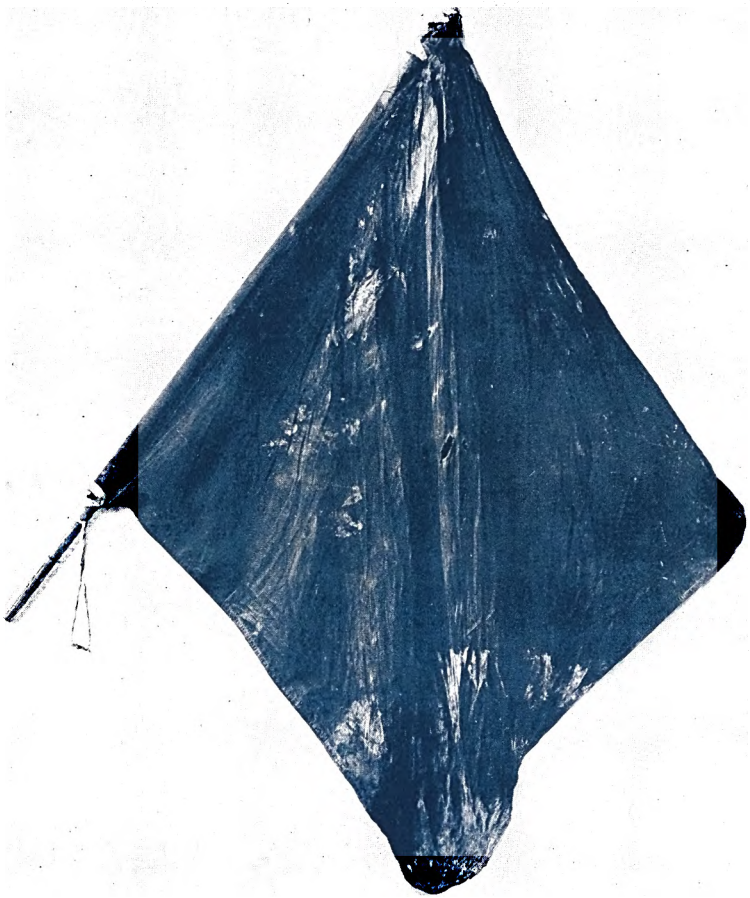
Here is another story of a great combat upon a later occasion. One of the huntsmen "grazed the pig as it climbed the bank of the lane, and a few yards further on with a second thrust had got his sword right through its body, but, failing to draw it out, had been pulled from his saddle on to the ground, the sword coming out as he fell. The pig whipped round and came for him and he had just time to jump to one side, like a bull-fighter, and run it through again as it passed by his feet. It charged again at once and, meeting it square, he drove his sword through its cheek, when it turned, he after it, over the field into a small patch of thick bushes."[2] Although desperately wounded, the pig escaped into the Bois de Contes, where it remained undiscovered. When the wood was searched by men with fixed bayonets twenty-one other pig bolted in every direction.

At the beginning of April the strength of the Regiment was 34 officers, 601 other ranks and 591 horses. These early days were occupied in preparing to move and with the exception of a small detachment serving with the dismounted party of the 8th Cavalry Brigade, the Regiment was concentrated at Cavron by April 5th, the only trouble being an outbreak of influenza among the horses. Everyone was on the *qui vive*, important events were afoot and soon Essex was to know that once again the Yeomanry of their County had triumphantly withstood a fierce and murderous test.

1. p. 82. "The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War." (*Whitmore*).

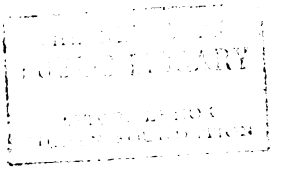
2. p. 80. "Sport in Peace and War." (*Buxton*).

Digitized by Google



MONCHY-LE-PREUX : The Signal Flag of the Essex Yeomanry which flew over the Regimental Headquarters. It is now hung in Orsett Parish Church.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

MONCHY-LE-PREUX.

HOW THE YEOMANRY RODE INTO IT.

AND HOW THEY HELD IT.

Monchy-le-Preux lies some three miles north-east of Arras and was, ere the war destroyed it, a small market town. It was set on a hill, visible to all around, and late in 1918 was picturesque even as a ruin when viewed from the Cambrai road. By that time, however, the tide of fighting had rolled away to the north and Monchy had become a subject for the narrators of the fierce, brave deeds which marked its capture and destruction. "Monchy," wrote Buchan, " was a key position of the country between the Scarpe and the Sensée, standing on the ridge of a little plateau some 90ft. above the surrounding levels. Its approaches on four sides were sunken roads lined with machine guns. In the end it fell to a converging attack from the north and west."[1] It was formidably strong and in the thrust from Arras in April, 1917, Monchy and the ridge were vigorously assaulted. Upon the opening day (April 9th) considerable progress was made in the advance towards it. The next day (April 10th) the town was almost taken, the enclosures north-west of it being reached in the early hours. Later on, the 12th and 15th Divisions got as far as the western edge of the town, but could proceed no farther owing to the lack of artillery support. The 2nd and 3rd Cavalry Divisions attempted to pass through to the south and north and the 1st Cavalry Division along the left bank of the Scarpe, but machine gun fire stopped them. Then came the day upon which the Essex Yeomanry rode into action once more, April 11th. The 37th Infantry Division attacked and entered Monchy and the 3rd Cavalry Division then moved forward in an effort to seize the heights lying to the east of the town. The enemy positions were too strongly held to achieve this purpose. The 8th Cavalry Brigade of the 3rd Cavalry Division, (The Blues, 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry) made a desperate effort to do so, but instead they had to garrison Monchy-le-Preux and hold it against the enemy reaction, and the Regiment's valour upon this day of incessant fighting is one of the most thrilling episodes in its war history. Buchan holds that the day's experience was " clear proof that cavalry were useless for pushing on through a gap in a modern trench line." The machine gun defence of the positions round Monchy was undoubtedly too strong to permit of cavalry going through, but the full narrative of events which is given below reveals that no gap existed at Monchy for the horsemen

1. p. 454, Vol. III. " A History of the Great War." (*Buchan*).

Digitized by Google

to ride through, as Earl French did at Abon's Dam in the Boer War of 1899-1901. British infantry were in Monchy when the 8th Cavalry Brigade arrived, but they were exhausted and disorganized with the capture of the town, whilst from the east came incessant artillery and machine gun fire. When the Yeomen entered the place had scarcely been touched by shell-fire; when they handed it over to incoming infantry eighteen hours later it was in ruins. The town had been a German headquarters for months, but as the French did not wish it to be destroyed, no artillery fire had been directed against it. No troops could debouch from Monchy under the storm of fire and it became a case of holding to what had been won. The Essex Yeomanry and the 10th Hussars would not budge and it was because of their fortitude and steadfastness that the position was retained. How such a task was accomplished is well worth the telling.

MAKING THE CAVALRY TRACK AT MONCHY.

A dismounted party of the 8th Cavalry Brigade, under Major J. O. Parker, was sent, on April 4th, to Arras to make a cavalry track through the trenches. They were to join Captain Carnegie, of the 3rd Dragoon Guards, who was already there organizing the work. They arrived at Arras on the 6th and as it was then within reach of the enemy's artillery and received fairly steady attention, it was like a City of the Dead, where everybody lived in cellars. The Yeomen had the unusual experience of finding themselves billeted in the prison, a substantial edifice, but sadly lacking in comfort! The men paraded at 2.30 a.m. on April 9th, the day of the first attack, to move to some trenches outside Arras, so as to be close to their work. At 4.30 the general bombardment and attack commenced and from where they were stationed they were able to see the Vimy Ridge "going up in sparks," and then the brilliant attack of the Canadians, who gained possession of the famous Ridge. At St. Sauveur, a suburb east of Arras, a cinematograph photographer was seen in a decidedly "unsalubrious" spot, near the Arras-Cambrai road, photographing troops going into action. About 8.30 a.m. Captain Carnegie led off the first party to commence making the track. It had to be made through an area of about 1½ miles, which was a network of trenches, barbed wire and shell-holes, the ground which had constituted for many months the front line, support and reserve trenches of both the English and Germans. The men were organized in parties of six and each party given a certain task to do, Captain Carnegie and Major Parker placing flags to mark where the road was to run and apportioning work. The task was accomplished much faster than was first hoped and the track was completed as far as Tilloy by 2 o'clock. Beyond this was about 1½ miles stretch of country covered with shell-holes, but without any trenches, then came the last line of German trenches, running

Digitized by Google

along the ridge of Orange Hill, just west of Feuchy road. About this moment Major A. Buxton came ambling up on his black horse, looking just like a fox hunter going along to a covert. Speculation was very keen as to the position in front and accordingly Major Parker went forward with a few Yeomen to try and learn what the situation was about a mile on. He found a few men of the Essex Regiment holding an outwork they had captured just short of the German line on Orange Hill, but they were in ignorance of the situation on their left and right. He returned with what information he could obtain and found the Brigade and Divisional Generals where the cavalry track ended. They had reluctantly decided the Cavalry would not be able to break through that day. That night the main shopping street of Arras, which had previously been most cautiously approached, was crowded with cheery soldiers shopping merrily. Arras was no longer within range of the enemy's artillery. About 1 p.m. next day, when the track was being continued across the more open stretch of country, horsemen were seen coming up on the left of the working party, and they turned out to be the 8th Cavalry Brigade. The dismounted men watched their mounted comrades start off reconnoitring, prior to the attack on Monchy. It was astonishing that evening to note the work that had been accomplished by the Pioneer Companies in remaking the Arras-Cambrai road, which 30 hours before had been nothing but shell holes. By 8 p.m. it had become a fair pavé road, crowded with wagons and troops, with Military Police directing the traffic. The next three days were spent in repairs on the railway, but on Friday, when the men returned from work, orders were awaiting them to go up at once to Monchy, some seven miles away, to bring back from the village the wounded of the mounted part of the Brigade. They were able to accomplish some very valuable work, taking back some 90 wounded. Although there was heavy shelling, they were fortunate and had only three casualties. The men returned pretty exhausted about 8 a.m. next day. The party rejoined the Regiment on April 21st.

GOOD FRIDAY IN A SNOWSTORM.

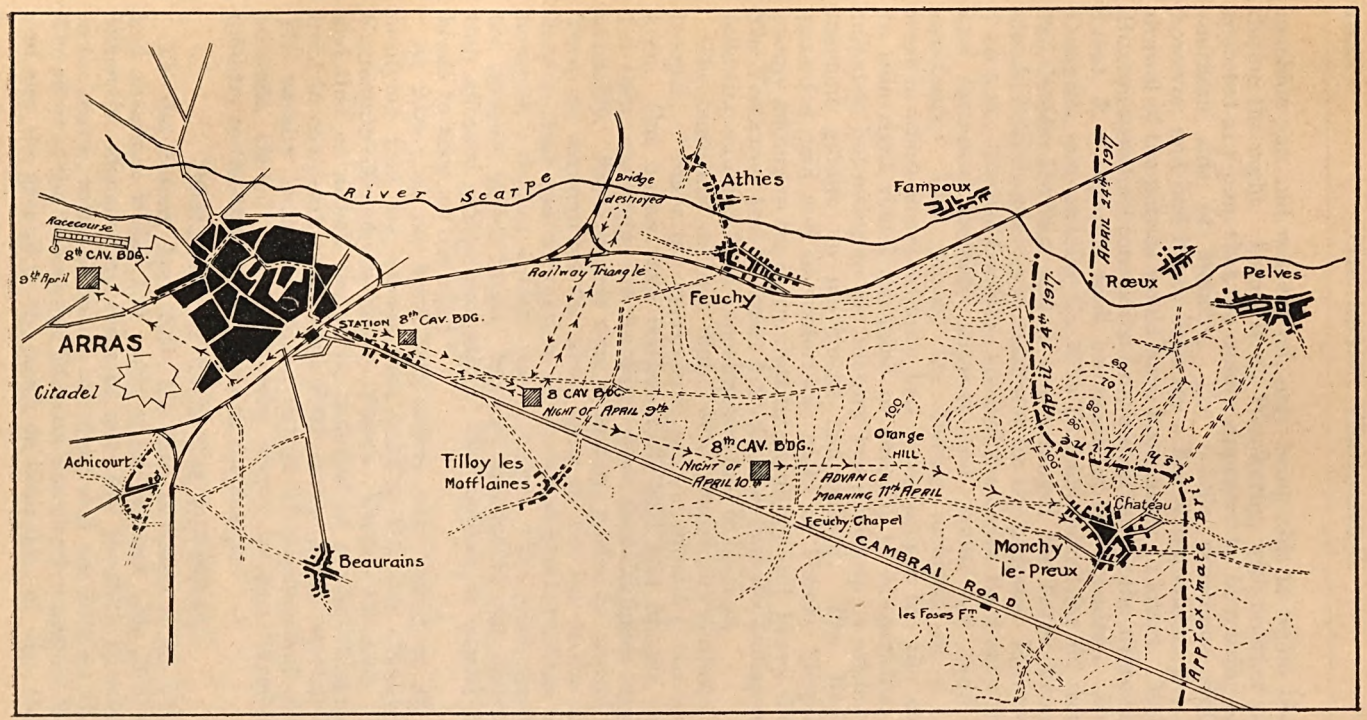
On Good Friday, April 6th, there was a conference at regimental headquarters, attended by all officers with executive responsibility, at which the plan of action for cavalry in the approaching operations in the Arras sector was explained. Next day Frévent was reached and on April 8th the march was continued to Gouy-en-Artois, where the 3rd Cavalry Division was concentrated. Suddenly, at 11 a.m. on April 9th, the Division was ordered to Arras and the Essex Yeomanry, after marching along very muddy roads, watered and fed on the racecourse at the western end of the town, where they were already in line with the big guns and could hear and see a good deal of the battle. The 8th Cavalry Brigade were ordered forward again early

Digitized by Google

in the afternoon and set off rapidly through the town and across the railway. The advance guard ("B" Squadron, 10th Royal Hussars, Captain Gordon Canning, and "C" Squadron, Essex Yeomanry, Major A. Buxton, D.S.O.) reached a point north-west of Tilloy-les-Mofflaines, but the main body were halted for some time on the eastern edge of Arras, among the advanced batteries on the cavalry track north of, and running parallel with, the Arras-Cambrai road. At this point the cavalrymen could see groups of prisoners, wounded and infantry moving over the old German front line. Owing to the presence of the enemy on Orange Hill, a height overlooking the eastern exits of Arras, the leading squadrons could not continue their reconnaissance. The weather remained stormy; there were frequent snowstorms during the night, so that the Brigade had a cheerless time before it when, towards evening, it reached the northern side of Tilloy in the second line German trenches, "among the shell-holes, abandoned guns and other debris of the fight." "It was now five o'clock," wrote an officer, "and in the two hours of daylight which remained we took the horses north to the Scarpe, watered them and returned to the bivouac close to the Arras-Cambrai road. By this time it had turned very cold and we made preparations for the night, feeling very chilly and hungry. Soon it began to rain and then to snow. By midnight the snow had stopped, but it was freezing hard. At 1.30 a.m. we got an order to move back. The roads, or rather tracks, were full of transport, so much so that we were kept waiting for three hours before we could start. Finally, we got under way and reached our old haunt just west of Arras as dawn broke. The weather now was perfectly vile. The wind biting, the snow driving in our faces and with no means of getting hot food or shelter we had some difficulty to keep going at all."

At 11 a.m. on April 10th the Brigade moved forward again to the position it had occupied at night. Captain Gordon Canning's Squadron of 10th Hussars and Major Buxton's Squadron of Essex Yeomanry reconnoitred towards Pelves on the south of the river Scarpe. An infantry advance was being made against Monchy, but when night fell the town was still untaken. The cavalry patrols were unable to make much progress, for the enemy fired upon them with machine guns from the slopes and spurs north of Monchy. Patrols of the 10th Hussars sustained several casualties. Lieut. G. Wear, with a reconnoitring patrol west of Monchy, sent a message by Corporal Barlow, which was received at 2.30 p.m., that he was stopped by machine gunfire. A quarter of an hour later another report came in from him by means of Troopers Savill and Foster that he was in touch with the infantry at that point; then at 5 p.m. Lance-Corporal Brown and Trooper Savill rode in with the message that the infantry had withdrawn and that the enemy were preparing to counter-attack. Lieut. Wear subsequently bumped into fire from an enemy

Digitized by Google



MONCHY-LE-PREUX: Movements of the 8th Cavalry Brigade on April 9th, 10th and 11th, 1917.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

machine gun and was cut off, only being able to rejoin his unit during the night. Lieut. R. C. Weatherby, with another patrol, reported at 3 p.m. that the enemy appeared to be retiring on the southern side of Monchy. The hostile resistance stiffened, however, and had it not been for a heavy snowstorm the withdrawal of the patrols would have been costly in losses. Major A. Buxton sustained concussion from a shell during the afternoon and Lieut. J. C. Chaplin took command of the squadron. General Compton, commanding the 37th Division, asked for aid from the 3rd Cavalry Division and it was arranged the Essex Yeomanry should hold themselves in readiness for the purpose. However, at 7.25 p.m., General Compton notified the Essex Yeomanry that he had increased artillery support and would not need their assistance. This proved the closing incident of a day's work in which an opportunity had been sought for the cavalry to ride right round the flank of Monchy in co-operation with infantry, but owing to the infantry being held up by artillery and machine gunfire no movement materialized. The Regiment passed a cold and uncomfortable night at Feuchy Chapel, the enemy adding to the discomfort by desultory and heavy shelling. The Yeomanry had 60 horses hit. One or two also collapsed the following morning from exposure and had to be shot.

The hardships of that night were graphically outlined by a trooper: "Snow lay everywhere on the ground; the air was keen. Our horses were restless with cold and hunger, for we fed them sparingly, not knowing when fresh supplies might be available. Extra guards were, therefore, posted to control them. Then we manœuvred for sleep, lying to the lee of the horses, deep in slush and wrapped in snow-soaked blankets, from which, however, a deal of warmth was to be got. The slush yielded to the pressure of our forms, became moulded to our shapes and thus afforded partial protection. Our saddles we placed at our heads to keep off the wind."

At 2.30 a.m. on April 11th orders were issued to all units notifying that the enemy was holding the line, Wancourt—Guémappe—Monchy-le-Preux—Pelves—Mount Pleasant Wood, and that an attack was to be launched at 5 a.m. all along the front in co-operation with the Fifth Army attack on Bullecourt. The cavalry were to take advantage of a successful infantry advance, should the opportunity occur, to pass through the infantry to the Quéant line south of the Scarpe.

POSITION OF THE 37th DIVISION.

The day before, April 10th, the 37th Division of the VI Corps had advanced within 500 yards of the western side of Monchy. When the offensive was resumed next day the 37th Division was in the centre, with the 3rd on the right and the 15th on the left. The effort of the first-named Division was directed against Monchy and also the ground to the south on both sides of the Cambrai

Digitized by Google

road in the vicinity of Guémappe. The attack was entrusted to the 112th and 111th Brigades, with the 63rd Brigade in support. The 112th Brigade made considerable progress on the right and were able to establish themselves on the ridge just east of La Bergère, with posts over the crest. By noon they were occupying the sunken road there, in touch with the 3rd Infantry Division on the right and the 3rd Dragoon Guards (6th Cavalry Brigade) on the left, the latter having ridden forward in the advance at a later hour with the 3rd Cavalry Division. The 111th Brigade, directed against Monchy and its environs, had 13th K.R.R.C. (right) and 13th Rifle Brigade in front, with the 10th and 13th Royal Fusiliers in support. Unfortunately, the artillery support had been transferred an hour before to aid the attack of the 15th Division and the lack of an adequate barrage and the natural obstacles encountered caused the movement at first to be rather slow. Four tanks arrived about 5.30 a.m. and, with their assistance, progress was much more rapid. Ere long Monchy was reached, the divisional report stating that the troops were in time to catch the enemy with Lewis gun-fire as he retired in the open eastwards. By 9 a.m. the whole of Monchy was cleared and 150 prisoners taken. It was at 9.10 a.m., according to the 37th Division report, that the 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry rode in and "they were of the greatest assistance in strengthening the defence, especially with their Hotchkiss guns. To the south of the village the 3rd Dragoon Guards promptly filled the gap which existed between the 112th and 111th Brigades, while the 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry established a line between the two roads which run north-east to Pelves, as well as filling other gaps which existed east of the village." There had been, meanwhile, important movements to the north of Monchy, which had a distinct bearing upon the fortunes of the 8th Cavalry Brigade that day. The 15th Division reported at 6.55 a.m. that the 45th Brigade was well east of Monchy and the 63rd Brigade of the 37th Division was thereupon ordered to secure the high ground in the neighbourhood of Bois des Aubpiénes, covering the right flank of the 15th Division and supporting the left flank of the 111th Brigade. At 8 a.m. a verbal message was delivered stating that the 15th Division was just west of Pelves and the 63rd Brigade was accordingly sent forward. When the leading battalion reached the high ground north-west of Monchy about 10 a.m. it came under enfilade machine gun-fire from the direction of Rœux and, so states the divisional report, "it became evident that the 15th Division had not progressed east of Monchy, as reported." Accordingly little advance was made in this direction, while other battalions of the 63rd Brigade, "moving further to the south to avoid enfilade machine gun-fire as much as possible, got in touch with the 111th Brigade in Monchy." This, briefly, is the story of the entry into Monchy-le-Preux of the 37th

Digitized by Google

Division and it must be read carefully in conjunction with the narrative which follows concerning the 8th Cavalry Brigade. It will be noted that when the 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry moved forward at 8 a.m. in the endeavour to seize the spurs facing the River Scarpe north-east of Monchy the 111th Brigade had not been able to advance beyond the latter town and that Pelves was not in the hands of the 15th Division. Moreover, the retardation of the advance of the left flank of this division enabled the German machine guns along the north bank of the Scarpe to divert the 8th Cavalry Brigade from their objective and also—two hours later—that of the 63rd Brigade of the 37th Division. In these circumstances it will be seen the cavalry were given an impossible task, though, as events proved, their presence was essential to the consolidation and retention of our hold upon Monchy.

The 3rd Cavalry Division (6th and 8th Brigades leading, with the 7th in support) were to be ready to advance at 6 a.m., but at 5.30 a.m. the 37th Division, then engaged in the capture of Monchy, reported that the 111th Brigade was held up by machine gunfire and could not get into the village and that two tanks were being sent up in support. After a long wait a message came at 7.55 a.m. from the 6th Cavalry Brigade that the 112th Brigade reported Monchy had fallen and also considered it safe to say that La Bergère had been entered, too. Patrols of the 3rd Dragoon Guards confirmed the news regarding Monchy, though they added that the infantry had apparently not gained the eastern edge of the village, whilst a hostile barrage was falling one hundred yards west of the outskirts.

ADVANCE OF THE 8th CAVALRY BRIGADE.

The 8th Cavalry Brigade stood to at 5.30 a.m. and at 8 a.m. orders were received to advance, Essex Yeomanry leading, then the 10th Hussars, with the Royal Horse Guards in reserve. The task set the Brigade was to seize and hold the high ground, villages and woods on the eastern spurs facing the River Scarpe about 4,000 yards east and north-east of Monchy. These objectives were only to be attempted in the event of information being first received that

(1) The village of Monchy was in the hands of our infantry, and that

(2) The sunk road leading north-east from Monchy to Pelves was in our occupation.

Verbal intimation that Monchy had been captured and that the infantry were moving in an easterly direction had just before 8 a.m. reached G.O.C. 8th Cavalry Brigade (Brigadier-General C. Bulkeley Johnson) and was held by him to warrant a forward move, though there was no information to hand concerning the Monchy-Pelves sunken road.

Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, in command of the Essex Yeomanry,

Digitized by Google

conferred at 8 a.m. with Brigadier-General Harman, D.S.O., commanding the 6th Cavalry Brigade, Lieut.-Colonel Burt, D.S.O., commanding 3rd Dragoon Guards, who were operating on his right, and with Lieut.-Colonel Hardwick, D.S.O., commanding the 10th Hussars, who were on his left. At 8.30 the advance began. "C" Squadron of the Essex Yeomanry (Lieut. Chaplin) being ahead as an advance guard, with "B" Squadron, 10th Hussars (Captain Gordon Canning), following, each squadron being strengthened by a section of machine guns. Lieut. Chaplin's orders were to advance by bounds, reconnoitre and eventually occupy the high ground north of the hill (Infantry Hill), with his right on the Monchy-Boiry-Notre-Dame road, in touch with the 3rd Dragoon Guards, and his left on the northern edge of Keeling Copse and in touch with the 10th Hussars. The ultimate objective of the Regiment was a line in the neighbourhood of Boiry-Notre-Dame, with an advanced post overlooking the River Scarpe.

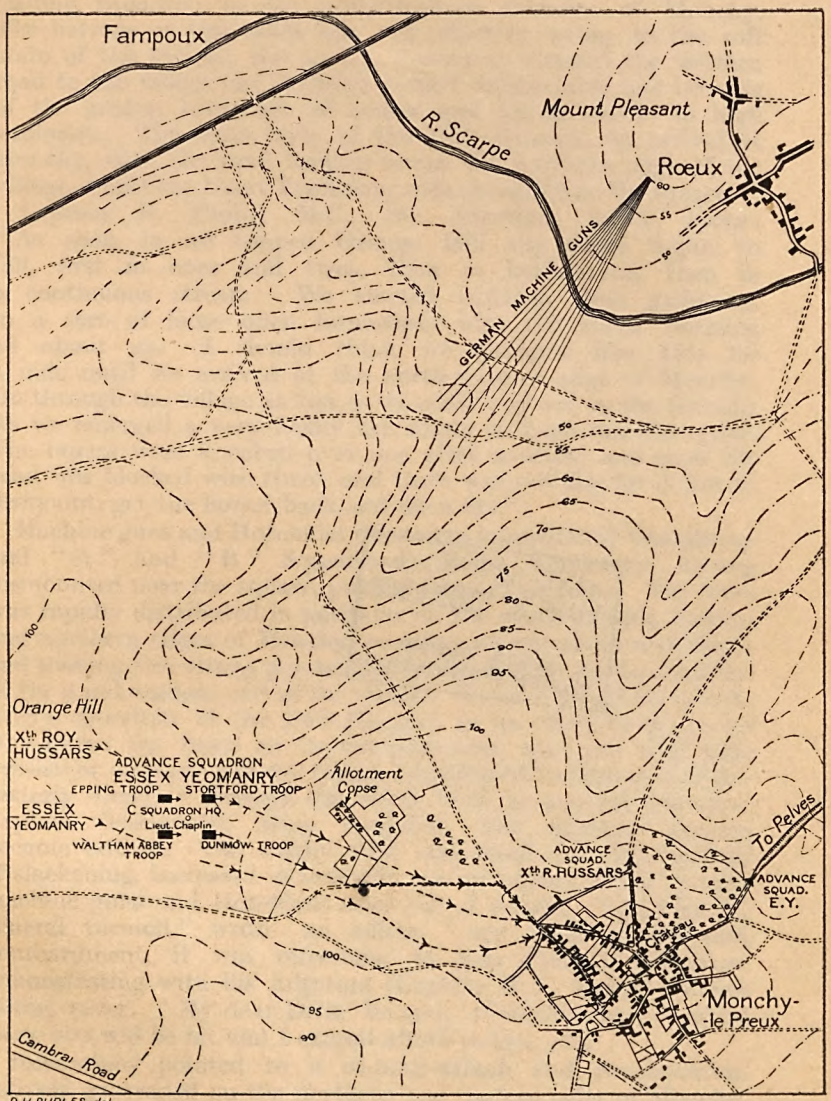
THE ENTRY.

The leading squadron of the Essex Yeomanry, with Stortford and Dunmow troops in front and Waltham and Epping following, rode rapidly over the southern end of Orange Hill. As they emerged upon the crest severe machine gunfire smote them from the direction of the sugar factory at Rœux, north of the Scarpe, which almost annihilated the two leading troops and caused the survivors of the squadron to swerve in the direction of Monchy, where better cover was to be obtained, and which movement quickly brought them past Allotment Copse into the north-western entrance of the town.

When inside Monchy the Hussars and Yeomanry parted company, "C" Squadron, Essex Yeomanry, taking the central road to the square and thence by the sunken road running in a north-easterly direction towards Pelves; "B" Squadron, 10th Hussars, followed until they reached the centre of Monchy, when they struck due north, passing through the chateau grounds. Both parties were immediately stayed from further advance by the intense fire directed upon them. "Bodies of men and horses lay in the streets," wrote one trooper, "and the ping-ping of the sniping came more and more frequently, the lead whistling past one's head on each side alternately. Those snipers were evidently bad sighters, for whilst they must have gone for men rather than for horses, their bullets flew too low, nine out of every ten that struck anything hitting an animal."

Thus heavy machine gun-fire caused the change of direction which led the Brigade into Monchy instead of passing it by on the north. The main body of the Essex Yeomanry, also fiercely fired upon as they crossed the southern portion of Orange Hill—suffering casualties, which included Major Hill and 2nd Lieut.

Digitized by Google



D.H. BURLES, del.

1000 800 600 400 200 0 1000 Yards

MONCHY-LE-PREUX: Line of Advance of "C" Squadron, Essex Yeomanry (under Lieut. J. C. Chaplin) and a Squadron of the 10th Royal Hussars, April 11th, 1917.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

White—took a south-westerly course as they lost sight of the leading squadron in the north-western entrance of Monchy. The barrage at this point was not effective owing to the soft state of the ground, but as the Yeomanry entered the western road to the village the shell-fire caused considerable loss because of the greater resistance of houses and paved streets to high explosive. The main body of the 10th Hussars, on arrival at Monchy, took the road leading round the northern edge of the village, whilst the Essex Yeomanry rode straight into the square.

Captain R. Proby, M.C., the Adjutant, wrote home: "As soon as we topped Orange Hill the shells began to fall, first in ones and twos, then in half-dozens, then in a continuous stream. We started trotting, then galloping, in a sort of loose open formation, with the shells bursting all about us. I should think we galloped like this for a mile until we arrived at the north-western edge of Monchy. On through the village as fast as we could and out on the far side. As we emerged a very heavy fire smote us from machine guns. The horses were knocked over one after another, and soon the road was blocked with them, and there was nothing for it but to dismount, get the horses back and open fire."

Machine guns and Hotchkiss rifles were immediately brought up and "A" and "B" Squadrons, Essex Yeomanry, having dismounted near the square, pushed forward on foot. The force was rapidly distributed in positions on the south-eastern, eastern and northern edges of Monchy, covering all entrances and slopes and making two strong points, one in the chateau garden and one at the north-eastern exit of the village. Lieut.-Colonel Hardwick, with a squadron of the 10th Hussars, in an effort to make his way round the town on its northern side, was met with such consistent machine gun-fire that he was forced to turn in a south-easterly direction through the wood, both he and his adjutant, Captain Greenwood, being wounded. The situation rapidly became critical. The enemy shell and small arm fire, instead of slackening, increased in intensity and put many of the cavalry machine guns and Hotchkiss rifles out of action. "Amidst the general turmoil," wrote an officer, "and noise of incessant bombardment, it was refreshing to hear Colonel Whitmore remonstrating with his Adjutant (Captain R. C. Proby) for not taking cover. 'My dear Dick,' he said, 'if you continue to stand there you will be hit and I cannot afford to lose you.'"

Indications pointed to a counter-attack and consolidation actively proceeded on the northern and eastern sides of Monchy. Though bodies of the enemy could be observed in the neighbourhood of Infantry Hill concentrating for an offensive, the strength of the machine gun-fire prevented the German movement from materializing. Isolated parties, chiefly of the 111th and 112th Infantry Brigades, were collected together and were a welcome

Digitized by Google

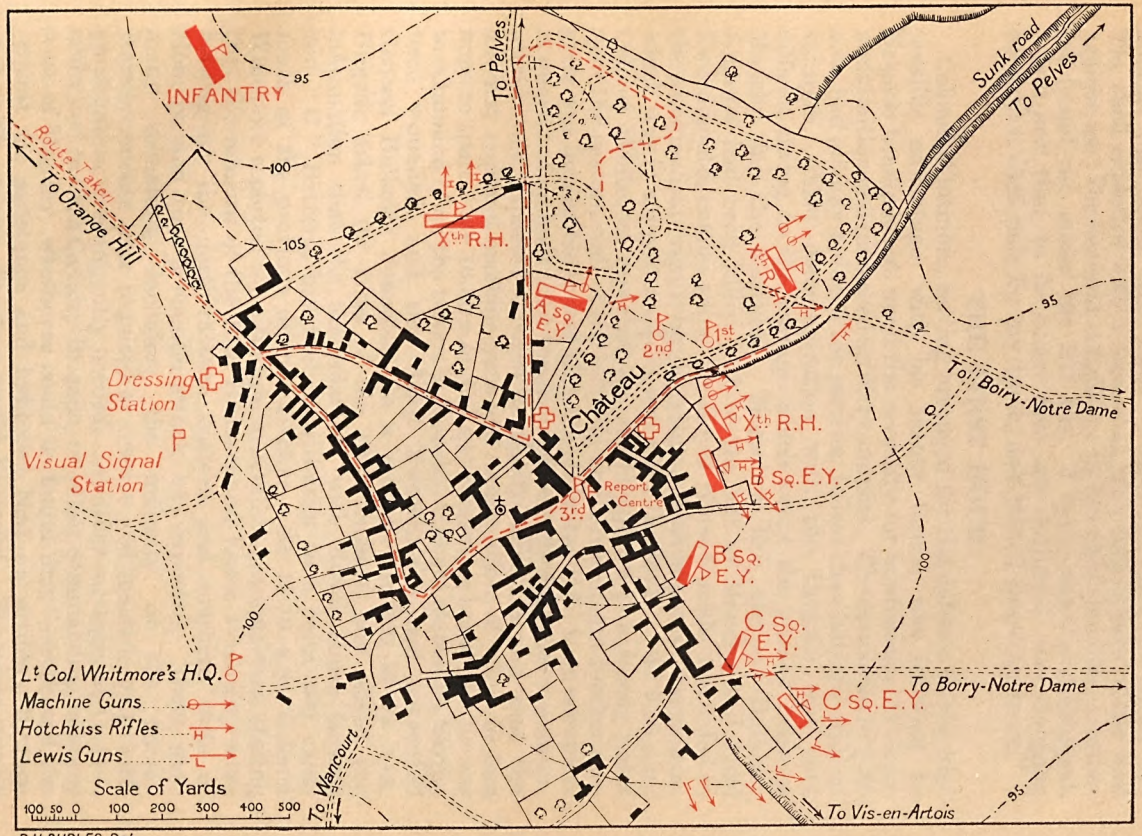
reinforcement to the rapidly dwindling cavalry regiments. Considerable assistance was also rendered later by a party of Northamptonshire Yeomanry, which had entered the town.

The system of defence was as follows: "A" Squadron of the 10th Hussars held the secondary road to Pelves and Orange Hill on the northern face of Monchy, with "A" Squadron of Essex Yeomanry on the eastern side of the road close by the chateau garden. To their right, guarding the sunk road to Pelves running out of the village in a north-easterly direction, was another squadron of Hussars, Colonel Whitmore's headquarters being at the south-eastern entrance to the chateau gardens. Lying well out beyond the chateau was an infantry post. Facing due east and south-east, and watching the road route to Boiry-Notre-Dame and that to Vis-en-Artois were a squadron of the 10th Hussars and "B" and "C" Squadrons of Essex Yeomanry, posted in half squadrons. The machine guns were placed mainly in the northern and north-eastern strong points, where the counter-attack was expected to come, Hotchkiss rifles and Lewis guns (the latter had been found abandoned) being effectively distributed on the eastern and south-eastern fronts. A visual signalling station was installed on the western slope just outside the town.

DIGGING-IN.

Whilst these arrangements were being made the experiences of Trooper E. E. Tompkins, of "A" Squadron, are those of the others: "We dodged and threaded our way towards a walled garden and there set about digging ourselves in, piercing the wall for our own pot shots. From above these walls a furtive glance showed, in the wood below, the crouching and creeping forms of apparently innumerable Bavarians, grey green against the darker masses of twig and stem. That wood was alive with them, as close as the Kaiser could wish—somebody said there were 3,000 of them—and they were pushing and poking about with machine guns; their batteries were somewhere behind the ridge beyond. I drove my own hole through the bricks; then, for a few breathing moments, sat and enjoyed a smoke, wondering what the people were doing at home. Just then, to my surprise, a good-sized lump of shrapnel dropped two inches from my right foot and buried itself deeply in the ground. This made me edge closer to the wall, but just then another fellow and I were sent to the opposite side of the garden. There we had to make a large hole in a wall big enough for men to dive through. We were in a warm corner and just as we reached it a shell burst in the road without. Not far above the tree-tops came a Hun aeroplane and we were fired at from it by a machine gun, as were also the troops round the near walls. But we soon turned our rifles on the visitor and he passed. A moment after, as I was striking my pick into the wall, a Boche shell struck it on the other side, making a big hole much

Digitized by Google



D.H.BURLES Del.

MONCHY-LE-PREUX : Disposition of the 10th Royal Hussars, Essex Yeomanry and Infantry Details on April 11th, 1917. Reproduced by permission from Lieut-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore's book, "The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War, 1914-1918."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

quicker than I could have done. Some fragments of metal struck me in the face—pat, pat; one on the left cheek bone, another just below that, whilst a third lay open my under lip. The shell exploded with a force that blew large pieces of the wall against me; the heaviest caught me in the right shoulder; another bit found me under the left ear. I spun round and dropped. I had just time to be aware that my Adjutant was dragging me into a shell hole by my tunic, and then I knew no more."

THE FIRST HOUR.

Colonel Whitmore, having arranged for the defence to the best possible advantage with his scanty forces, was insistent to Brigade headquarters upon the necessity for reinforcements, more ammunition and increased artillery support. The casualties by 9.30 a.m. had already reduced the garrison to less than half the original strength, whilst communication with the Brigade was very difficult owing to the barrage which swept the ground between Monchy and the reserves. Moreover, Brig.-General Bulkeley Johnson had been killed just to the left of Monchy and Lord Tweedmouth, commanding the Royal Horse Guards, succeeded in the command, at brigade headquarters. With him was his regiment, which was in support and did not enter the town. At 9.55 a.m. Colonel Whitmore reported the establishment of a strong point near the eastern wall of the chateau and advised that further progress was impossible unless Hill 100 (Infantry Hill) were occupied. A quarter of an hour later the same officer reported that a counter-attack was expected from a southerly direction and that the infantry required machine guns and ammunition, of which he had none to spare. By 10.30 a.m. Colonel Whitmore knew that he was in command of all the troops in Monchy, Colonel Hardwick having been wounded, and that Lord Tweedmouth had succeeded General Bulkeley Johnson. In a message written at 11 a.m. Brigade asked for news of the 10th Hussars, and added the information that the headquarters, with Royal Horse Guards and "G" Battery, had had to withdraw to a point 400 yards south of the previous night's bivouac. At 11.10 a.m. Colonel Whitmore reported the situation in detail to headquarters, stating that the remains of the 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry were holding on the north-eastern, eastern and southern exits of Monchy, and that a counter-attack was expected. There were many casualties, including the majority of the horses. Reinforcements were required as reserve and machine guns with ammunition were urgently needed. Another message, at 11.45—addressed to "8th Cavalry Brigade, or officer commanding infantry west of Monchy, whichever could be found first"—repeated the request for assistance and indicated that an artillery barrage in a north-easterly direction would be useful. The same urgent need was emphasized at 12.20 p.m., the barrage this time to be directed upon Twin Copses, in the neighbourhood of which the

Digitized by Google

enemy were massing. Ten minutes later Colonel Whitmore was endeavouring to get into touch with Lieutenant-Colonel Burt, commanding 3rd Dragoon Guards, on the right, reporting the situation and asking for help with machine guns and ammunition. The left flank was somewhat exposed, but men of the 111th Infantry Brigade were employed to fill the gap and communication was established with the 63rd Brigade. The rapidity of the despatch of the messages points to this time being deemed extremely critical, as, indeed, it was. One officer described it as "rather a bad moment, for the shells were falling thick!" Casualties were increasing rapidly and the dressing stations were full to overflowing. The dwindling garrison expected a counter-attack, yet there was no sign of hurry or confusion in the commander's messages. Most of them have been preserved, written in a firm hand by the Adjutant, with the map references clearly indicated. A trooper, who was close by, wrote that Colonel Whitmore was dictating messages as coolly as if in a club in Piccadilly. "The greatest difficulty was experienced throughout the day in communicating with Brigade by any other means than by despatch-riders, who did admirable service throughout. The signalling equipment of both regiments was destroyed."[1] Lieut. R. Holland and Lieut. Jack Lingeman (mortally wounded) were particularly noted for plucky service in the transmission of intelligence.

SCENE IN THE VILLAGE.

A Brigade message, written at 12.45 p.m., was received about 1 p.m. that aeroplane reconnaissance had revealed the enemy entrenching on the line, Pelves—Keeling Copse—St. Rohart Factory, and that patrols of the 3rd Dragoon Guards had confirmed the report of the German position south of the town. The 6th and 8th Cavalry Brigades were ordered to make no further advance until the hostile guns behind the Bois du Vert and Bois du Sart had been dealt with, devoting themselves to strengthening the positions they held. The Divisional Commander added that the bulk of the cavalry and horses should be withdrawn under cover, leaving machine-guns and Hotchkiss rifles, with a few scouts, to hold the line. Brigade added that it was realized this move was not possible at present, but suggested that the horses should be sent out of the village. The most cheering intelligence was the last sentence, which stated: "One squadron of Royal Horse Guards coming up to support Essex Yeomanry." Unfortunately, the squadron never arrived. It was caught in the enemy barrage and lost most of its officers and men killed and wounded. Only the commander of the squadron, the Earl of Pembroke, crawled into Monchy on foot, just before 3 p.m.,

1. p. 102. "The 10th P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War." (*Whitmore*).

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"but it cheered us to see him, because it showed that the Blues were trying to get up to help us." The evacuation of the horses was also a slow and difficult process, "due in the first place to casualties already caused, which blocked the roads, and, secondly, to the fact that so large a number of horses of so many units were seeking the same shelter outside the village, thus attracting the fire of the enemy's artillery." Moreover, the active enemy aeroplanes, which constantly flew over the town, swooped down and shot at the horses with machine guns. Between 1 p.m. and 2 p.m. the Adjutant, Captain Proby, ransacked the village for ammunition. "It was perfectly indescribable. Great clumps of horses and men lying about. In some places the whole street from side to side was completely filled with them, all on top of one another and mostly in pieces." This officer was lucky enough to discover a dug-out at the south-eastern corner of the square, and to this more suitable spot the headquarters were promptly transferred. Transit of the square was perilous for other reasons than shell-fire. A wounded trooper proceeding to the dressing station wrote: "I had reached the far corner of the square and was just thinking how I was sniped at before just at the same spot, when ping! a bullet flew just over my head, striking a house opposite. It came from one of the many snipers who still lurked hidden in the houses and had spotted me as I rounded the corner. Then, a little farther on, I met a stretcher-bearer, who directed me to the dressing station. I stumbled on. As I got near the place shells were bursting all round and above it, and I wondered if I could ever reach it alive. What looked like fog lay all around it; it was dust and debris, driven upwards in clouds by the shells that rained incessantly upon the whole neighbourhood, the day being warm and windless."

Although many of the officers and most of the senior non-commissioned officers had been killed or wounded, the stout-hearted garrison never lost grip or nerve. The following is typical of the reports from officers in charge of sections of the defences. Second Lieut. L. B. Hore, commanding the Orsett troop of "B" Squadron, Essex Yeomanry, reported to his squadron leader at 2.30 p.m.: "Am with 15 Orsett men and four Chelmsford men in a support trench at the Shrine on high ground on left flank. There are three officers and about 31 other ranks of 10th Hussars also here. Nothing further to report. Please send any new orders by bearer." During the afternoon the shell-fire died down, for the enemy's artillery was being countered by the British guns. "Thenceforth everything went swimmingly. Little clumps of infantry kept bobbing out of odd corners. They had lost their officers, but they were all fitted into the scheme of defence." Some of the infantrymen were employed conveying the wounded to the dressing stations—one having been established at the Château by the Medical Officer of the 10th Hussars (Captain Wood) and the other at the north-western exit of the

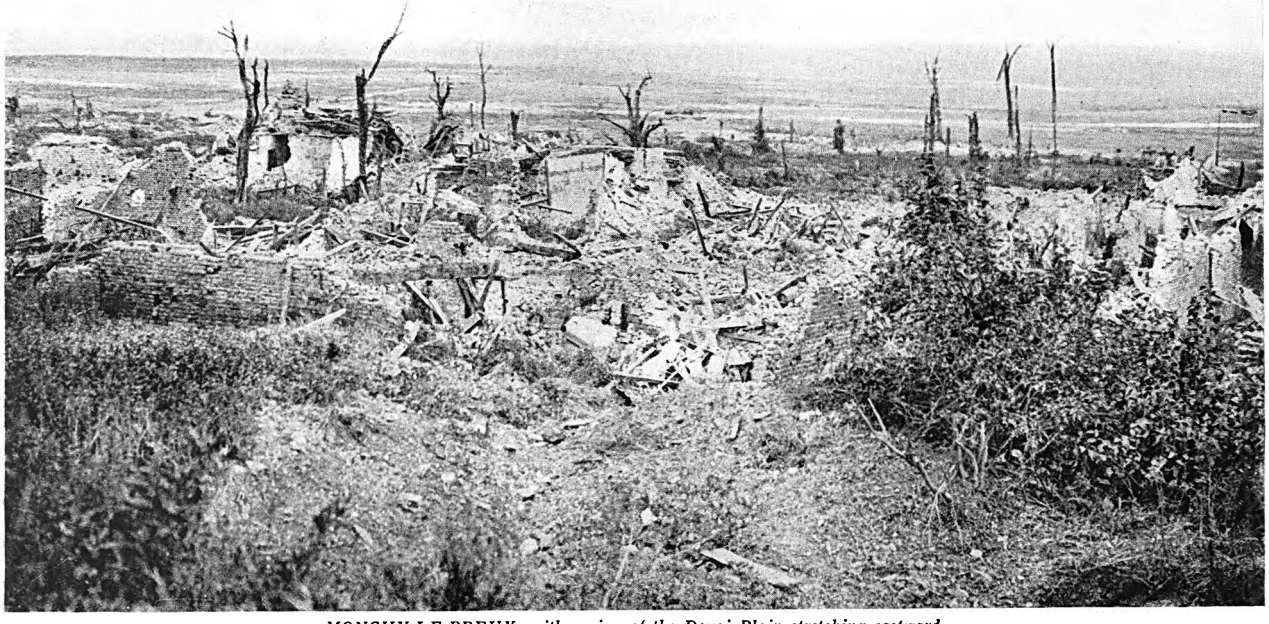
Digitized by Google

village by the Medical Officer of the Essex Yeomanry (Captain Stork). No praise can be too great for the work of these officers.

At 2.50 p.m. Colonel Whitmore reported to Brigade that he was gradually strengthening the position and that four machine-guns had been obtained from the infantry. The shelling was severe at times and he wanted to know when they might expect relief.

The leader of "B" Squadron, 3rd Dragoon Guards, on the right of Monchy, was informed at 4.30 p.m. by Colonel Whitmore that he did not propose to withdraw until he was relieved by infantry and that he had only just sufficient men to occupy the positions he held. By 5 p.m., however, he was of opinion that the village was in a fair state of defence, though there were no local reserves or supports. There were small bodies of at least five infantry regiments employed, in addition to the cavalry and machine gunners. At 6.8 p.m., in reply to a report from an officer that his men had neither food nor water, Colonel Whitmore replied: "I am sorry to say that I can do nothing in the matter of rations and water. All I have was collected from horses and from the dead, and I have sent you your proportion. I have good reason to suppose we will be relieved to-night. Please send down all your wounded at once to the dressing station, as ambulances are on their way." Brigade reported the welcome news at 6.20 p.m. that ambulance and stretcher squads had passed along the Cambrai road and that there was a dressing station at Les Fosses Farm, but five minutes later Colonel Whitmore was asking for food and water for the remnants of the 111th Brigade, who had had no rations for 24 hours. In his situation report at 6.30 p.m. the commander of Monchy defences estimated the strength of the Essex Yeomanry and 10th Hussars at 85 each and stated that the shelling had died down. Patrols sent out at dusk ascertained that the Germans were digging in about 300 yards from the north-eastern outskirts of the village and were also on the forward crest of Infantry Hill, due east of Monchy. The anticipated relief was long in coming and at 9.5 p.m. orders were given to the officers commanding formations to effect liaison with their neighbours and satisfy themselves that the strength throughout the sector for which they were responsible was well distributed. In reply, Major E. Ruggles-Brise, as commander of the South-Eastern Sector, made the following report, which affords valuable information of the dispositions which were made and the cheerful spirit which prevailed, notwithstanding the trying experiences of the day: "I am guarding my sector with Vickers, Lewis, and Hotchkiss guns, the whole of my front being arranged for crossfire. Each post has double sentries on for one hour each. I am patrolling hourly the only dead ground where the enemy might possibly assemble. I have established liaison with my right and left. I have no reserve left except one Hotchkiss team, but I consider my position sufficiently strong."

Digitized by Google



MONCHY-LE-PREUX, with a view of the Douai Plain stretching eastward.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE RELIEF.

At 9.56 welcome preliminary orders were issued that relief was coming within a short time and that guides were to be sent to headquarters at once; at 10.9 p.m. all unit and formation commanders were notified that the relieving troops were the 37th Brigade of the 12th Division and that they would take over detachment by detachment, the outgoing troops moving off as they were relieved. The machine gun officers were to make their way to the previous night's bivouac and thence, if the Division had moved, to the Champ de Courses, west of Arras. No horses being available, the guns were to be carried to Les Fosses Farm before they could be loaded on to lorries. About 11 p.m. the 37th Brigade arrived and immediately proceeded to take over the Monchy defences, an officer reporting at 12.15 a.m. (April 12th) that he had relieved "B" Squadron. Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore soon afterwards handed over to Lieut.-Colonel Dawson, D.S.O. (West Kent Regiment), and the only men of the 8th Cavalry Brigade who remained were posted in a few detachments in the northern sector who could not be reached until next day, and of whom Captain Palmes, 10th Hussars, was left in charge. The Adjutant (Captain Proby) waited behind to give certain orders and it was not until 3 a.m. he said good-bye to Monchy and trudged through the snow to catch up with the Regiment. At Feuchy the horses were taken over again and after riding through a blinding snowstorm at dawn the Yeomanry reached the racecourse, a veritable quagmire, where the exhausted men lay down in the mud beside their horses and had what sleep they could before marching back to billets at Gouy. It was some time, however, before the remnants of the 10th Hussars and Essex Yeomanry left behind were able to leave Monchy. They were constantly shelled throughout the following day and it was not until 5.30 p.m. that an infantry attack eased the situation in the northern sector and enabled Captain Palmes to march his small force back to Arras and thence to Gouy-en-Artois, where the remainder of the Brigade were at that time assembled.

One of the most prized letters in Colonel Whitmore's possession is a personal note from Lord Tweedmouth, temporarily in command of the 8th Cavalry Brigade, after Brig.-General Bulkeley Johnson was killed: "It is a source of the greatest regret to me that General Bulkeley Johnson was not there to see and approve the gallant manner in which the Essex Yeomanry and 10th Hussars took and garrisoned Monchy under most difficult circumstances, repelling two counter-attacks under heavy shell-fire and machine gun-fire, and consolidating their position so as to effectively deny a much coveted position to the enemy. The courage and determination of all ranks were most notably conspicuous and their coolness during a long and trying day beyond all praise. I would like to emphasize the fact that

Digitized by Google

the success achieved that day was entirely due to your admirable dispositions and the gallant manner in which they were carried out."

A WARRIOR'S HOMECOMING.

An officer and six men to act as stretcher bearers were hastily despatched about 6.30 p.m. on April 12th in an ambulance to bring back the body of Brigadier General Bulkeley Johnson, which, it was understood, was at Feuchy. The anticipation was that return was probable within an hour. Unexpected difficulties cropped up. The ambulance was unable to leave the Arras-Cambrai Road, so the party walked on to Feuchy. Having found the dug-out of the battalion headquarters, they learnt that the body was still at the company's dug-out in the line, some two miles away. A guide was furnished and the men set out over the open shell-holed country. After a mile or so the guide lost his way and the party found themselves in an unpleasant situation, as desultory shelling was going on, and in the dark the guide was unable to pick up any landmarks he knew. At last, by pure good fortune, they happened on the company dug-out. There they found the body, which had been placed there with great difficulty, two men being wounded in getting it in. An attempt was made to march by compass to the spot where the ambulance was waiting, as it involved covering two sides of a triangle to return by the route they had come. The new route, however, proved impossible owing to the numerous shell-holes, into which the stretcher-bearers constantly fell in the dark. A guide back to the battalion headquarters was, therefore, obtained and the party again set out, but made slow progress, as constant halts for rest had to be made. The shelling had by this time considerably increased and proved a powerful spur to the weary stretcher-bearers. The new guide suddenly confessed that he had lost his way, which had a depressing effect upon the party, who were tiring considerably under their load. They struggled on, stimulated by the shelling, and at last heard the sound of a waggon, which was found to be bringing up ammunition for the artillery. The party then ascertained their bearings and it was not long before the ambulance was reached. The men got back about 3.30 a.m. on April 13th, very tired and hungry, having set out without food, expecting to be back by 7.30 the previous evening.

INCIDENTS OF THE FIGHT.

The Essex Yeomanry are, of course, proud to claim Lance-Corporal Harold Mugford as one of their own. He received the Victoria Cross for distinguished gallantry at Monchy. He was in the Essex Yeomanry machine gun detachment until the 8th Machine Gun Squadron was formed. After the town had been occupied, he placed his machine gun in a forward and exposed position and dealt effectively with an enemy formation massing

Digitized by Google

PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

MONCHY-LE-PREUX : Taking the Horses out of Action, April 11th, 1917.
From a Drawing by Mr. A. A. Straker, who served with the Regiment.

Digitized by Google

for a counter-attack. His No. 2 was killed almost immediately and at the same moment Mugford was severely wounded. He was ordered to a new position and told to go to the dressing station as soon as it was occupied. Refusing to report to the latter, he remained on duty with his gun, inflicting further losses on the enemy. Soon afterwards a shell broke both of his legs, but he would not leave his gun, begging his comrades to take cover. Ultimately Mugford was taken to the dressing station, where he was again wounded in the arm. There were many other gallant deeds by officers and men — for all did well. There was the signal officer (Lieut. Winter Rose), who maintained communication by despatch riders when all signalling equipment had been destroyed, and who worked continuously to the end, although wounded. The signalling sergeant, too, established a signal station at the western entrance to Monchy and remained out four hours in the open under heavy bombardment, during which time he was endeavouring to open up visual communication with the Brigade headquarters. A corporal remained with his Hotchkiss rifle in a forward position all day until he was severely wounded. His gun was knocked out twice by shell-fire, but he replaced it each time, showing absolute disregard for his personal safety. A sergeant, too, remained in observation at an advanced shellhole for over four hours and during the periods of intense bombardment sent his men under cover, while himself remaining alone to watch. The messengers had an anxious and difficult time and there was one who made no fewer than five journeys. There was another corporal, who, after his horse had been shot under him, followed on foot, recovered his Hotchkiss rifle and coolly brought it into action, remaining with it all day until the squadron was relieved, in spite of a wounded hand. One private, after two of his comrades had been sniped in an attempt to complete a piece of trench by joining two shellholes, remained alone at his task and accomplished it singlehanded. Then another corporal twice took parties into the town under heavy fire to fetch up tools and ammunition, leading at dusk a patrol to locate the enemy position and bringing back good and accurate information. So the stories run on and on.

COLONEL WHITMORE'S CONCLUSIONS.

Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore's conclusions respecting this noteworthy action should be put on permanent record. He wrote:

1. (*a*) It was quite evident that Monchy was not held by troops before our arrival, although small parties of both the 111th and 112th Brigades were found in the village.

(*b*) The enemy might have easily occupied the entire village at any time prior to the cavalry having put it into a state of defence.

2. (*a*) Our casualties from shell-fire were extraordinarily small in the open, but very severe in the village; this was due to

Digitized by Google

the soft state of the ground in the open as opposed to the hard state of the roads and walls of the houses.

(*b*) If it had not been for the fact of being held up in front by machine guns the casualties caused by shell-fire would not have been serious, but the combination of the two caused considerable casualties.

3. Great difficulty was experienced in removing the led horses. This was due in the first place to casualties already caused, which blocked the roads, and, secondly, to the fact of such a large number of horses of many units all seeking the same shelter outside the village, thus attracting attention, with the result that the enemy's guns were directed upon them at once.

There were constant visits over our lines during the day by enemy aeroplanes, which were left to their own devices on each occasion, unmolested except by ourselves. On one occasion I was informed that one swooped down very near the ground and used his machine gun against our led horses. If these enemy aeroplanes had not been allowed to visit us so often the position which we held would not have been so accurately marked by the enemy guns.

The casualties to the Essex Yeomanry in the engagement were: Officers—killed, 1 (2nd Lieut. J. F. Lingeman), wounded, 12; other ranks—killed, 18; wounded, 94; missing, 10; total, 135. Over 70 names were entered on the list of those having served with conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty.

Upon arrival at camp there was an outbreak of a mild form of "trench feet." A sad duty was performed on April 15th, when the body of the late Brig.-General C. B. Bulkeley Johnson was buried in the cemetery at Gouy-en-Artois and the Essex Yeomanry provided a party of one hundred as an escort, whilst all the officers attended. The command of the 8th Cavalry Brigade went to Lieut.-Colonel A. Seymour, D.S.O., Scots Greys, who had been commanding the Northamptonshire Yeomanry. Major-General J. Vaughan, commanding the 3rd Cavalry Division, addressed the regiments of the Brigade on April 16th and complimented the men on their gallantry. Marching orders came and the Regiment went with the rest of the Division to Barly, via Doullens, on April 18th, reaching Bois Jean and Le Puits Berrault in the Beaurainville area, "B" Squadron being in the latter village. With comfortable billets and fine weather the men quickly got into condition again. Moreover, being good horsemen, they were pleased with the remounts, over 260 of a good stamp arriving in two days. Reinforcements came in, two drafts, to the number of 109 other ranks, being received from the 5th Dragoon Guards, Derbyshire Yeomanry, Hants Carbineers, Notts Yeomanry and West Somerset Yeomanry, the first great influx of men having no connection with the county.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MONCHY-LE-PREUX. On the left is Allotment Copse, which the Essex Yeomanry skirted when riding into the town on April 11th, 1917.

Digitized by Google

FIGHTING AND FARMING.

The early days of May were busily spent in riding, musketry and Hotchkiss rifle instruction. A pleasant ceremony occurred on the 5th May, when the Corps Commander presented awards made for distinguished conduct in the recent fighting, including one D.S.O., two M.C., two D.C.M. and 14 M.M. Orders came for another move and for several days the Brigade were on the march. On May 12th the Essex Yeomanry reached the Saulchoy—Argoules area, vacated by the 3rd Dragoon Guards, the dismounted men of the Brigade being conveyed by motor lorry, under the command of Captain R. A. Thomson, of the Essex Yeomanry. Next day Gennes Ivergny was the destination ; on the 14th, Barly ; 15th, Havernas ; 16th, Querrieu, and then Hamel on the 17th, where a day was spent in a rest and clean up. It was there that Major Buxton found the nest of the Golden Oriole, in the beautiful Bois de Vaire, later to be recognizable only as " a torn-up and absolutely destroyed heap of timber and debris." " The only nest of a Golden Oriole I saw last summer was in an alder, and very easy to see, though I confess I walked under it and stared at it many a time before I saw it, and then had to be shown it by a man who had never seen one before. The nest was at least one size too small for the bird and must have been very uncomfortable to sit in. That was a red-letter day, for over and above the Oriole's nest I caught ten trout on a dry fly in the afternoon and saw one of my troop teams win a football cup in the evening." Courcelles was reached on May 19th, the march being through Méricourt, Dompierre, Herbécourt, Biaches and Péronne, all in the devastated area, and affording much interest on that account. The Regiment on arrival had the pleasure of finding the horse lines had been already prepared by the dismounted party. Riding about in this area was an uncanny experience. Not a sound was heard as a village was approached, not a movement seen, not a human being, dog or even chicken. Every village, unless occupied by British soldiers, was absolutely deserted. Every house and farm building had been destroyed ; every tree, whether apple, plum or ornamental, had been cut down. The country was a desolate waste, intersected occasionally by lines of trenches and barbed wire—the Desert of War. Training in bombing, sniping and Hotchkiss firing was varied by bathing and polo, whilst Lieut. Harold Newman had charge of the haymaking for the Brigade, being instrumental in stacking some 150 tons of good material in his area. The commander of the Essex Yeomanry presided over the dinner attended by Old Etonians of the Brigade on June 4th in the ruined Chateau of Courcelles.

Digitized by Google

IN THE "BIRD CAGE."

Large dismounted parties of the Division were employed upon trench duty and for a time Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore was in command of D1 sub-sector, which lay east of Péronne and overlooked Vendhuille and Ossus Wood. Included in the defensive system was an advanced position termed "The Bird Cage," connected by a long communication trench to the Quarry, which contained the support. The enemy line in this sector ran about 400 yards in front of the British posts and aeroplane reconnaissance revealed that at night the Germans were busily engaged in constructing a sap towards the "Bird Cage." Such audacity had to be checked and accordingly a raid was organized to prevent further progress and at the same time to identify, if possible, the enemy units employed. The operation was carried out on the night of June 16th-17th and the details were very carefully planned. The raiding party was composed of ten Essex Yeomen, under Lieutenant R. Holland, a bombing party of five from the same regiment, under Lieut. Hore, a right covering party of 15 from the Royal Horse Guards, under Lieut. Sale, and a left covering party of the same number from the 10th Royal Hussars, under Lord William Scott. Two Stokes trench mortars were also employed under Lieut. A. Lowther, of the 10th Hussars. The Essex Yeomen engaged left the "Bird Cage" at 11.20 p.m. and cut the wire in front of the German saphead. This was followed by a heavy barrage upon the main German approaches, the field artillery lengthening their range for ten minutes, which allowed the raiders and bombers to enter the sap. They found a dozen of the enemy had taken up a position fifteen yards in the rear and Lieut. Hore's party bombed them with great accuracy, inflicting casualties which were estimated at 15 killed and wounded. Time did not permit identification, for at the end of ten minutes the whole of the artillery, field and heavy, with trench mortars, commenced a furious bombardment of the trench system, under cover of which the raiding parties withdrew. The casualties of the attackers consisted of two officers wounded, both of the 10th Hussars. The Germans retaliated on the night of June 20th, when the Leicestershire Yeomanry were in the line. The latter gallantly beat off the attack after fierce fighting, in which the enemy lost heavily, some dying on the wire entanglements and others being killed by their own bombardment. Four prisoners were taken as they entered the trench. The Leicesters lost an officer and seven other ranks killed and 15 wounded.

TALE OF A BOOBY TRAP.

The booby traps set by the Germans in the retreat from the Somme area in the Spring of 1917 caused the circulation of many

Digitized by Google

Officers' Shelter, "Birdcage," June, 1917.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

stories of mishaps, some unhappily true, others rather more romantic than real. There was a roller near the cross roads at Catelet Copse, which had not been moved from fear that in its passage downhill it would pass over a circular disc, which was declared to be a detonator placed so as to fire a mine in the Copse. Major the Earl of Pembroke, Royal Horse Guards, humorously tells the story of the dissipation of the legend : " Well do I remember that momentous event in June, 1917. For months that 100 yards of road leading up to the Little Priel Farm had been avoided like a plague spot. Ration parties and others made wide detours, watching the deadly roller with breathless anxiety. People whose duties forced them to go within 100 yards of it spoke in whispers and walked delicately like Agag. It was on a lovely afternoon in June that the Colonel of the Essex Yeomanry and the Second-in-Command of the Blues, after an excellent lunch, proceeded to visit certain posts in sector. As they reached the cross-roads at the bottom of the hill, half-way up which lay astride the road this deadly contrivance for blowing up the British Army, they stopped. 'Let's go and look at that adjective roller,' said the Colonel. 'Righto,' replied the other, and, to the horror of all beholders, they side by side boldly walked up to it. They walked round it once or twice and then proceeded to inspect the detonator. This was quite plain to the eye just a few yards below, so that the roller, if moved, must necessarily go right over it. 'I don't believe a word of it,' said the Colonel, and, producing his pocket knife, proceeded to scrape the earth away from around the cap so as to see if it was connected. The Second-in-Command, having grown pale at this fearsome deed of daring and the effects of the lunch having worn off, had half a mind to beat all previous records to the bottom of the hill. However, he conquered the momentary feeling of fear, and as the Colonel dug deeper and deeper and the whole world did not dissolve into a cloud of smoke and debris, he became as brave as a lion. One final dig by the penknife and the detonator moved from its place and revealed nothing. It was the lid of a cocoa tin ! Now the daring of these two elderly officers knew no bounds ; they rushed at the roller, tore away the wooden props and proceeded in the heat of the afternoon to push the infernal thing down the hill. It got going and rolled rapidly down half-way and then subsided into a ditch. Nothing happened and, thanks to the heroism of these two officers, yet another road to Berlin was open to the Allied armies in the field."[1]

Early in July the 8th Cavalry Brigade moved to Suzanne, then to Méricourt, Authieule, Rebreuviette and thence to Camblain-Châtelain, when, after a stay of ten days, another change of scene came to Thiennes, which was reached on July 17th and occupied for the remainder of the month. The Regiment was near to

1. p. 126. "The P.W.O. Royal Hussars and Essex Yeomanry during the European War." (*Whitmore*).

Digitized by Google

Armentières, which had suffered severely from gas shelling, whilst Aire, nearby, had to endure long range shelling, which tore huge holes in the road leading thereto. A regimental horse show was held at Thiennes on August 7th, when Lieut.-Colonel Lord Tweedmouth, Major F. B. Stapleton-Bretherton and Captain Charles Kerr, M.C., were the principal judges. Two nights afterwards an enemy air raid spoilt the sleeping hours, but did no damage. The next day fresh billets were allotted at Berguette, where the Essex Yeomanry were subjected to several air raids in an enemy effort to bomb a munition factory at Isbergues. Some horses were killed and a few men wounded, but happily not fatally. Two men of the Orsett troop had a narrow escape, however, for a "dud" shell fell between them. They were using the same blankets for the sake of warmth, but with the exception of a hole in each blanket no harm was done. On August 25th the horse show of the 3rd Cavalry Division was held at Busnes, and the Essex Yeomanry entered in the classes for troop competition, best troop horse, light-weight charger and G.S. wagon and train. The Regiment spent September at Berguette, Pas-de-Calais, busily training on a range prepared by Captain Chaplin, M.C., and supplying dismounted working parties. Captain Stork, D.S.O., the Medical Officer, was specially thanked by the Maire of the Commune for his unceasing and devoted attention to the civil population, as a result of which several lives had been saved. Sergeant Aldous was sent with the best troop horse as the regimental entry for the Cavalry Corps Horse Show at Ramicourt and obtained the reserve prize. This horse was later taken over by Major E. Hill and won a sprint against some good horses on Armistice Day at Dieppe. It was a valuable animal and Major Hill wished to regain possession of it after the war. Evidently others also had a knowledge of its merits, for when he wrote for it he was told that it had been sent up to a D.A.Q.M.G. He wrote to the latter, but the letter was returned through the Dead Letter Office some time later. That D.A.Q.M.G. evidently had no existence. In spite of Major Hill's enquiries at the War Office, the animal was never traced. The chief event of September was a visit by Brig.-General R. B. Colvin, C.B., who was area commandant at that time. He came over from Acheux on September 17th and was greeted by a full-strength parade. The General was much gratified by his cordial reception and expressed his satisfaction with the appearance of all ranks, to whom he conveyed the thanks of the County of Essex for their gallant service and congratulations on the fame they had achieved.

A dismounted party was sent into the Ypres area on August 24th, 1917, which the Regiment had not entered since May, 1915. The change in the appearance of the city as the result of two years of war amazed those who were revisiting it. In 1915 it had a

Digitized by Google

battered appearance, but now it seemed almost flat. The men had a dreary time, for the weather was very wet and they were living in tents. Moreover, they were working in the sodden Flanders mud, east of Ypres, and an atmosphere of desolation pervaded this area which did not exist on any other part of the front. Continuous shelling by day was followed by air raid alarms at night.

IN READINESS AT CAMBRAI.

October was well advanced before the Essex Yeomanry again changed their station. On the 11th they were billeted between Guarbecque and Robecq, where an artillery officer of the 7th Cavalry Brigade gave a demonstration of the art of destroying German field guns. By way of Pernes the Regiment reached Camblain-Châtelain once again on the 17th and stayed there until the 21st, when the Frévent area was entered; thence on the 22nd "A" and "C" Squadrons were billeted at Naours and "B" Squadron at Wargnies, with the headquarters at Havernas, where again the Division was called upon to form a pioneer battalion working under the C.R.E. Cavalry Corps at Doingt. The famous dwelling caves of Naours were visited during the stay in this area. A change of some moment to the 8th Cavalry Brigade was made, the Royal Horse Guards going to the 7th Cavalry Brigade and being replaced by the Leicestershire Yeomanry. It was from Naours that the Yeomanry, with the rest of the brigade, marched out on November 18th for Bray, where the Division was concentrated. The attack of the Third Army along the Cambrai front was timed for November 21st, and an important part of the operation was to be the extensive employment of cavalry when the infantry had made a gap in the enemy's line. The 8th Cavalry Brigade was the reserve brigade of the Division, but that did not damp their ardour, for the first reports indicated every probability of an early move forward. Hour after hour slowly passed in expectation of the order to advance, but it came not, for the early optimism had not been justified, and on November 23rd the Brigade was diverted to Bertangles area, via Corbie and Querrieu, the Essex Yeomanry being billeted in rainy weather at Allonville. The German counter-attack on November 30th went far ere it was stopped. The 8th Cavalry Brigade was called upon for a dismounted battalion, to which the Essex Yeomanry contributed a company, under Major Gold, consisting of 206 other ranks. The men were despatched to Bernes in motor lorries, and later went into the line in front of Shepherd's Copse and afterwards in Graham's Post. Whilst they were away the Regiment was moved to Picquigny and it was from this station on December 26th that Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore left to take his turn in command of the dismounted battalion. The personnel of the Essex Yeomanry being much reduced, no training was possible and only care of horses could be undertaken, the monotony of this employment being broken

Digitized by Google

by the selection of eighty horses for transfer to the Near East.

On December 23rd the Regiment moved to Vignacourt, Havernas and Naours, travelling across country, as the roads were almost impassable with frozen snow and ice. Then came another heavy fall of snow, wintry weather continuing until the New Year dawned. The intense cold caused the men serving with dismounted battalions in the neighbourhood of Le Verguier to suffer considerably. Their discomfort was relieved to some extent by the inauguration of a soup kitchen. The soup was made by the troop cooks, under the direction of Private Charles Darling, cook of the Southend troop, and was carried on the backs of those detailed to take it to the front line in the same way as an infantry pack. This ration was very much appreciated, but occasionally there were mishaps, amusing and otherwise. Gum boots were worn by the men in the front trenches in this sector (if they were lucky enough to get them). One night a "soup" detail was struggling forward with his load of liquid on his back and had occasion to pass through a gap in the wire entanglements in front of the support trenches, where there was about a foot of sticky mud. There he held fast and could only get clear by leaving his gum boots in the mud and standing by in his stockinged feet whilst others of the party salved the precious footgear.

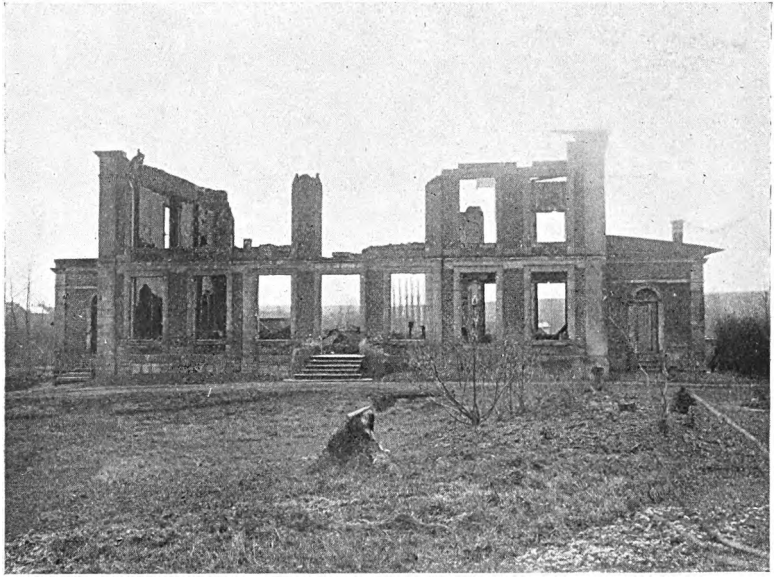
CHRISTMAS BOX FOR THE BRIGADE.

The defences were improved as far as practicable, but it was difficult to do much on account of the state of the ground. Vardencourt Château, formerly a stately residence, with pleasant gardens, was a pile of debris, walls and trees having been ruthlessly destroyed by the Germans ere they evacuated the district some months before. The width of "No Man's Land," ranging from 1,000 to 2,000 yards, with a valley between, made necessary the nightly employment of patrols, who were clothed in white to aid invisibility. In these nocturnal expeditions there were some exciting encounters. On the night of December 21st-22nd, 1917, an enemy party surrounded a patrol of the 8th Cavalry Brigade between two copses known as "Big and Little Willie" and after a stiff fight the cavalrymen lost four men killed and several others wounded. Revenge was soon taken. On December 23rd Lieut. Wear, with three officers and 60 other ranks, lay in Ascension Wood all night, but no Germans appeared. However, on Christmas Eve another patrol, comprising four officers and 80 other ranks, waiting in the same road, surprised a German party, 40 strong, on Christmas morning. The latter left two prisoners. One of the latter, who wore the Iron Cross, was badly wounded by the explosion of a hand grenade in his pocket and died after he had been carried down to regimental headquarters. The other man, still in his teens, pretended to be dead and an officer, knowing how anxious

Digitized by Google

PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



Regimental Headquarters at Montecourt, January, 1918.

Digitized by Google

headquarters were to get identification of the troops in front, picked up the corpse, as he thought, and carried it some 500 yards ere he discovered the rueful truth that his prisoner was as capable of walking as he was himself! The man was sent to Brigade headquarters as a Christmas box from the men in the line and proved of great value, as he was very talkative.

A FINE CROP WHICH THE GERMANS REAPED.

The month of January, 1918, brought with it the announcement that Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore had been awarded the Companionship of St. Michael and St. George. On January 27th the Brigade moved into huts at Montecourt, near Monchy Lagache, and remained there throughout the month of February. It was part of the devastated area and for miles around there was a scene of desolation. Working parties were provided for improvement of the defences round Bihécourt, Vermand and Jeancourt, but the most interesting work of the month was the effort to bring some of the surrounding land into cultivation once again. For this purpose the 3rd Cavalry Division Agricultural Organization was formed, with Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore as President, other Essex Yeomanry officers serving therewith being Lieutenants W. Ritchie (Cultivation) and R. D. Holland (Horse Labour). The scheme at first aimed at the cultivation of approximately 150 acres of potatoes in one plot—seed being sown to the extent of one ton per acre—then five acres of tares, with oats or other green crop in each regimental area, preparation of existing gardens or other suitable ground for the supply of vegetables, and as many hundreds of acres of wheat as time would allow to sow. The French authorities sanctioned the loan of their tractors in exchange for horse labour provided by the cavalry. The scheme was successful and was rapidly extended, so that by the third week in March many hundreds of acres were sown with potatoes and thousands of tons of manure spread over a wide area in preparation therefor, whilst a great area was sown with wheat. For this crop the owners of the land were to receive 10 per cent. of the produce as compensation, but where corn was sown the cost of the seed and work was charged against the owner, whose crop was to be requisitioned and purchased by the French Government. Unhappily the German offensive came, the land was hastily evacuated, the enemy entered into possession and reaped the harvest, though they profited little thereby, for the British Army swept them back again in August and Colonel Whitmore had the satisfaction of marching over the same land in September of that year when commanding the 10th Hussars in the attack on the Canal du Nord at Belle Inglise.

Digitized by Google

THE CRISIS AND HOW IT WAS MET.

PROPOSAL TO TURN YEOMANRY INTO CORPS CYCLISTS.

It was whilst the Regiment was at Trefcon that the crisis occurred—the German offensive of March, 1918—which led to the decisive fighting of the war ; it was there, too, a crisis came to the Essex Yeomanry and its extinction as cavalry was averted only by events which followed hard on the German irruption. On March 8th a warning order was issued stating that the 8th Cavalry Brigade would be broken up. The Leicestershire Yeomanry and Essex Yeomanry would be dismounted and converted into corps cyclist companies, being known as such by the county names they bore. The 10th Royal Hussars were to be transferred to 6th Cavalry Brigade and " C " Battery, R.H.A., to the 7th Brigade. This change followed upon considerable alteration in the composition of the 3rd Cavalry Division. The Indian Cavalry regiments had been sent to the East and as a consequence of the reduction of the Cavalry Corps to three divisions, the 7th Dragoon Guards, 6th Inniskilling Dragoons and 17th Lancers came into the 7th Cavalry Brigade to replace the Household Cavalry, who were being converted into Machine Gun Battalions. The 8th Hussars, also from the Indian Cavalry Division, became part of the 9th Cavalry Brigade, thus freeing the Bedfordshire Yeomanry for other service. Then came the last move, which affected the Yeomanry regiments of the 8th Cavalry Brigade. The Canadian Cavalry Brigade took the place of the 8th, and the Leicesters, Bedfords, North Somersets and Essex, who had been with the Cavalry Corps for three and a half years, were summarily removed therefrom and detailed for another form of service. The only Yeomanry regiment left untouched was the Queen's Own Oxfordshire Hussars. In the the early morning of March 10th German aircraft attacked the billeting area and though the Essex Yeomanry escaped, the 10th Hussars suffered severely. Yet the day was a sad one for other reasons. The time had come for the reorganization of the two Yeomanry regiments of the 8th Cavalry Brigade (Leicesters and Essex). The weather was bad and the conditions under which the redistribution was effected were as uncomfortable as they could be. The Essex were crowded into the huts occupied by the 1st Life Guards and the Leicesters into those of the 2nd Life Guards, whilst the horses remained out in the open. " No greater hardship was experienced than this event, when officers and other ranks had to become parted from their horses." On March 11th the Essex Yeomanry handed over 251 riding horses to the Division, " consequently losing mobility," and by the 15th the Regiment had moved by two parties (mounted men by march

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

LIEUT.-COLONEL EUSTACE HILL, D.S.O., commanding 104th (Essex Yeomanry) Brigade, R.F.A.

Digitized by Google

route and dismounted by rail) into the Longpré area (Headquarters, Liercourt; "A" and "C" Squadrons, Sorel; "B" Squadron Wanel), preparing for the change of role. There was very considerable indignation felt at the conversion of cavalry into cyclists, because it would mean disbandment. Only 322 of the original establishment of each unit were required, and the commanding officers of the Yeomanry regiments concerned were actively engaged in suggesting other methods of employment "with a view to preserving the personnel complete and the *esprit de corps* which at present exists." On March 9th Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, Essex Yeomanry, Lieut.-Colonel Herbert Combe, Leicestershire Yeomanry, and Lieut.-Colonel G. H. A. Ing, North Somersetshire Yeomanry, had presented to G.O.C. 3rd Cavalry Corps three alternative proposals:—

(*a*) That each Yeomanry Regiment, with the assistance of existing reserves at their depot, be formed into Machine Gun Battalions, and thereby preserve all officers and other ranks to serve together as heretofore.

(*b*) Failing the possibility of securing sufficient reserves to make up the required personnel, to form two Machine Gun Battalions consisting of personnel from each of the four Yeomanry Regiments in the Cavalry Corps.

(*c*) To form an Infantry Brigade of four battalions, each battalion to consist of the Yeomanry Regiment complete and made up to strength by reinforcements from the reserves at home.

Permission was given to Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore to proceed to London and on the next day, March 10th, he arrived in England with Captain T. Hay, Leicestershire Yeomanry, and Captain Ralph Gibbs, North Somersetshire Yeomanry, time not permitting of the inclusion of a representative of the Bedfordshire Yeomanry. Colonel Whitmore was quickly in touch with the Territorial Associations, and on March 12th, at 9, Eaton Square, S.W., a conference was held, at which Bedford, Leicester and Essex were represented, Somerset telegraphing their support of Colonel Whitmore's mission. The Earl of Warwick, Lord Lieutenant of Essex, presided and the Secretary was Major-General F. Johnson, C.B., Secretary of the Essex Territorial Force Association. At the conference Colonel Whitmore said the regiments admitted at once the necessity of being dismounted, but they felt very strongly the proposed conversion, which would mean the break-up of their units. The alternative proposals were approved and at 4.30 p.m. the same day the Secretary of State for War, Earl Derby, met the members of the conference, who were introduced by the Duke of Rutland. Lord Derby was assured that the majority of the men in the regiments belonged to the counties with which they were associated. The Secretary for War then pointed out the difficulty of maintaining the strength if four machine gun battalions were formed and Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore said that difficulty could be met by amalgamating two

Digitized by Google

regiments to each machine gun battalion. This proposal Lord Derby accepted and then came the difficult question as to which regiments should be amalgamated. A draw was made from Lord Derby's hat, which resulted in one battalion being formed of the Bedfordshire and Essex Yeomanry and the other of the Leicestershire and North Somersetshire Yeomanry. There were many details to be settled and on March 18th Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore interviewed the Earl of Scarbrough at the War Office respecting the disposal of officers under the new arrangement. There was also a suggestion, which was adopted, that the Leicestershire and Essex Yeomanry should amalgamate and the Bedfordshire with the North Somersetshire Yeomanry. Ultimately, at an interview at the War Office on March 23rd, Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore arranged with Brig.-General Vesey, D.S.O., for the appointment of officers and N.C.O's. to the new battalions, whereby one regiment should find half officers, senior and junior, and also the same proportion of N.C.O's., if possible, and that the second regiment should find the remainder. Officers and other ranks in excess of establishment were to form a reserve unless otherwise employed and used as far as possible as reinforcements to their own units. The new arrangement completed, Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore hurried back to France to find, on March 27th, that everything had been thrown aside at Longpré. The Yeomanry were once more in boot and saddle, destined to fill the gap which the Germans had created near Villers-Bretonneux.

Before passing on to describe the fighting which ensued, extracts should be given from letters and orders which paid splendid tribute to the work which the Yeomanry regiments had performed. On March 10th the British Commander-in-Chief (Earl Haig) wrote to Lieut.-General Sir C. T. McM. Kavanagh, commanding the Cavalry Corps, that the situation with regard to man power made it impossible to maintain all units now in the field and as a consequence the Army Council had issued orders that certain Yeomanry regiments were to be dismounted and converted into Corps Cyclist Companies. After expressing regret at this step, the letter proceeded: "The readiness with which the Yeomanry Regiments came forward at the beginning of the war to serve their country in the hour of need is worthy of the highest commendation. In the field all ranks have performed their duties under all circumstances with thoroughness and efficiency. I wish to express to all belonging to these regiments my appreciation of the services they have rendered during the last three years and my congratulations on the good name which they have already earned for their Corps. I feel confident that since this reorganization has become necessary, it will be accepted with the loyalty and devotion with which every turn of fortune has been met by British officers and men throughout the war."

Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O., commanding the Essex Yeomanry, issued the following special order, dated March 8th:

Digitized by Google

"To my officers and other ranks,

"Much as I should like to address you all personally regarding the transfer of this unit from a cavalry regiment to a cyclist regiment, I feel that on account of my old association with the Regiment as a cavalry regiment, and my knowledge of your feelings in the unfortunate circumstance, I could not trust myself to convey in words my feelings for you all. I am too deeply grieved at the necessity for such a transfer to express my feelings. We have all been so proud of our Regiment for years, and our pride culminated in our being one of the first Yeomanry regiments to be called upon to proceed overseas and also in our being one of the four Yeomanry regiments which formed part of the Cavalry Corps. We have as a regiment distinguished ourselves in the field. You have built up a fighting unit second to none in the British Army and your actions have been proved by the honours and awards you have received. Please accept from me my heart-felt gratitude for the support you have always accorded to me as your commanding officer. Proud as I am of every one of the seventeen years which I have been a member of the Regiment, never have I been prouder of the Regiment than I am to-day; and in addressing these few words to you, I am confident that whatever you may be called upon to carry out in this war in the future, you will always maintain your devotion to duty, which has been such a prominent feature of all ranks in this Regiment in the past.

"Let us remember that we cannot possibly serve our old Regiment better during this trying period of transition of our interest than by all of us making up our minds to play the game."

A PROPHECY WHICH CAME TRUE.

What the squadron leaders felt is well expressed by the remarks of Major E. Hill, D.S.O., when reading the Commanding Officer's order to "A" Squadron: "I can only add to what the Commanding Officer has said how deeply I feel this change for the old Regiment and in particular for my squadron. You probably never realize how much pride I take in the squadron, which I feel is one of the very best in the British Army. No doubt at times when I swore at you pretty hard you very likely thought it was not quite all meant and I do not mind admitting now it was not. But I can tell you this, that I have always felt that I had a most magnificent lot of officers and N.C.O's. and men, and that I have always had the fullest confidence in you." Then, with a prescience which turned to fact, Major Hill added: "I have always been looking forward to the day that we might get at the Huns as cavalry and we have never had that chance. There is just a possibility that it may still come—you know we are standing to at three hours' notice—but if an attack takes place, of course it will be boot and saddle up and turn out as soon as possible and I know that an attack is expected, possibly to-morrow. In that event I know that you will be ready and it

Digitized by Google

is possible that if we get this chance we want we might avert the change to cyclists yet. I thank you all, officers, N.C.O's. and men, for the way you have stuck to the job all through these trying times, whether fighting in the open, in the trenches, or in billets, and cannot say how much I feel the breaking-up of the squadron which I have had the honour to command during the war. I know that you will agree with the Colonel—we will play the game to the finish." And the Yeomen did play the game to the finish, as we shall see.

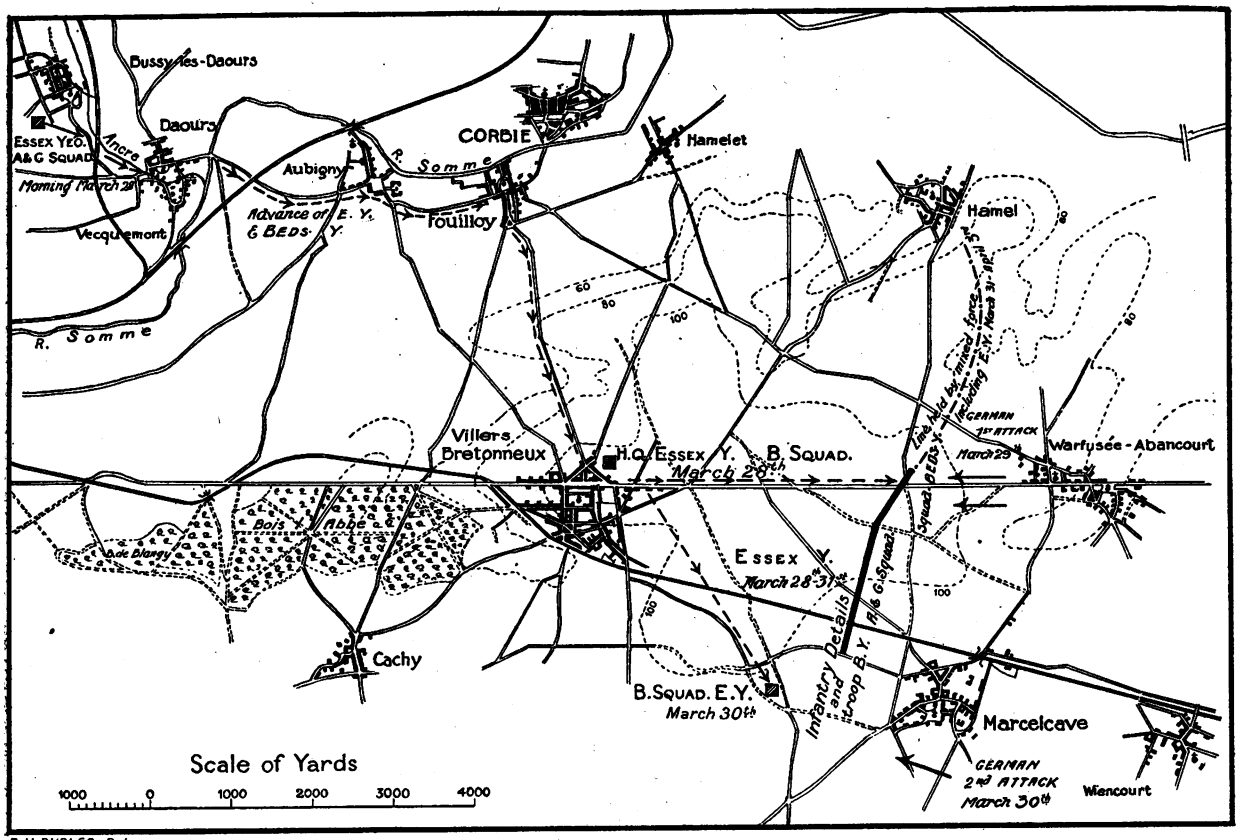
The Germans, in their desperate offensive, came very near to seizing Amiens. They were stopped in and about Villers-Bretonneux in the closing days of the month and in the plucky resistance there the Essex Yeomanry played a notable part. It is true that towards the end of April Villers-Bretonneux fell into enemy hands, but by this time the force of the attack was far spent and they were gallantly dislodged by the Australians.

VILLERS-BRETONNEUX.

AN EMERGENCY WHICH TURNED THE YEOMANRY INTO CAVALRY ONCE MORE.

Whilst Colonel Whitmore was pleading the cause of the Essex Yeomanry in England, orders came at Longpré, on March 26th, that the Regiment was to be re-equipped as cavalry again and in the expressive words of one of the officers, "Horses and saddlery were shot at us from all directions." The irony of the situation was that almost the last horses of the Yeomanry regiments were despatched on March 23rd and on the evening of March 25th arrived at Marseilles for transhipment to Palestine. The Essex Yeomanry were to be ready to march early on the following morning and as it was impossible to have the whole Regiment ready in time, "A" and "C" Squadrons were prepared for action at the expense of "B" Squadron and headquarters, the chief deficiency being tools. Hotchkiss guns were re-issued. All was bustle when Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore arrived and resumed command. Instructions had been received to move up in support of the hard-pressed 1st Cavalry Division, which had been in action for six days. Accordingly, at 3 a.m., on March 28th, "A" and "C" Squadrons rode to Bussy-lès-Daours to report to divisional headquarters for orders, but at that place they had the misfortune to lose the officer in charge, Major A. Buxton. D.S.O., who was sent back to hospital suffering from a severe attack of influenza. He was succeeded by Major Eustace Hill. At 6 p.m. the Bedfordshire and Essex Yeomanry (less "B" Squadron), under Lieut.-Colonel Walker, Bedfordshire Yeomanry, moved off to Fouilloy, across the Ancre, and near to Corbie, this village being in direct road communication with Villers-Bretonneux. Arrived there, they came upon elements of General Carey's mixed force, which, consisting of details, stragglers, schools

Digitized by Google



D.H. BURLES, Del.

Disposition of Essex Yeomanry at Villers Bretonneux, March 28th—31st, 1918.
From a Sketch by Major Eustace Hill, D.S.O.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

personnel, tunnelling companies and much else, had done splendid service in holding the line of the old Amiens defences between Mézières, Marcelcave and Hamel since March 25th. The particular detachments met with by the Essex men at Fouilloy were in retreat and could give little information to clear up the very obscure position of affairs. They reported Villers-Bretonneux was occupied by the enemy and Colonel Walker was ordered to locate the latter and hold them in check. He extended his whole force in open order, mounted, with two squadrons in support, and, covering a wide tract of country, moved in the direction of Villers-Bretonneux, which was found to be unoccupied. Two officers' reconnoitring patrols—one under an officer of the Bedfordshire Yeomanry and the other under Lieut. Solani, of the Essex Yeomanry—were despatched in search of the enemy. After a considerable time they returned and reported that they had got into touch with British infantry pluckily holding their ground on the railway line near Marcelcave and on the main road near Warfusée. These posts stated, however, that their flanks were unprotected and that they did not know if the enemy were holding the ground between them or not. Colonel Walker acted with prompt decision. He ordered Major Hill to dismount his squadrons and make good the line between these posts, a frontage of a little over a mile. Whilst Captain Chaplin was dismounting the men (the horses were subsequently shelled and sent back to Bussy-lès-Daours) and bringing them up to a convenient position for occupying the railway line, Major Hill rode on in the darkness with a single horse-holder to reconnoitre the position. Luckily he found a Canadian officer who had been over the country in daylight, and he was thus able to choose some slightly rising ground near the middle of the position as the core of his defence. At 4 o'clock on the morning of March 29th, with advance and flank guards out, Major Hill led the men to the chosen position, expecting to meet the Germans at any moment, but, luckily, they were not attacked. A number of shovels had been borrowed from the Canadian R.E., though, unfortunately, picks were not available. With two hours in which to work before it was dawn, the men were ordered to dig in as hard as possible, keeping the shovels going with reliefs. With great rapidity a trench was dug sufficiently capacious in one position to hold a troop, and its defence was entrusted to Lieut. W. C. V. Schwier, with the Ardleigh troop and two Hotchkiss rifles. More trouble was experienced in excavating the second position near by, as chalk was very quickly reached and without picks progress was hindered. However, sufficient cover was dug for two Hotchkiss rifles and a few men of the Colchester troop, under Lieut. Collis. The men not required to garrison the two posts were ordered to lie down on the side of the bank, showing themselves as little as possible. The officers were then called together and Major

Digitized by Google

Hill explained that the position was full of anxiety, but they had got to make the best of it; they must hold on where they were and there would be no retirement under any circumstances.

As the morning light strengthened on the 29th an excellent observation point was obtained by climbing one of a small clump of trees and by this means the enemy were accurately located. They could be seen moving about in large numbers between Warfusée and Marcelcave, the latter place being apparently packed with troops. The situation is best explained in the words of an officer serving with the Essex Yeomanry: "We could not understand why they did not advance and mop us up. Either they did not know how lightly the line was held or they had not got their transport and guns up and so were not ready." The day was passed in tense anxiety. Several messages were sent from the front line to headquarters during daylight hours, but as the runners were invariably heavily fired at, few, if any, got through, and accordingly there was no response to Major Hill's urgent request for tools and wire. It was desperately cold; there was no water and for food the men had to be content with the bully beef they carried. An amusing story is told of a patrol hidden behind a haystack observing Warfusée. Parched with thirst, they saw marching along the high road a hilarious party of Germans escorting a full water butt! The enemy attempted no movement and by nightfall the garrison of the line had received welcome reinforcements. During the day a squadron of the Bedfordshire Yeomanry came up on the left flank and occupied an old trench system, whilst a few score infantry and a troop of Bedfordshires were advantageously placed between the Essex and a point over the railway lines. A R.E. officer also reported with 20 men and although the latter were all of the "C" class, they proved very useful from that time onward, bringing up rations and wire.

Early upon this trying day, the 29th, headquarters and "B" Squadron (Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C.) had moved out of Longpré and by 11 a.m. were at Bussy. Leaving their horses at Fouilloy, "B" Squadron marched rapidly to Villers-Bretonneux in support of "A" and "C" Squadrons and of parties of the Bedfordshire Yeomanry then holding, under Major Hill, a sector which was astride the main Villers-Bretonneux-Estrées road on the left to the Marcelcave railway on the right. Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, upon return from England, found "B" Squadron at Longpré. He arrived at Villers-Bretonneux on the night of March 29th and assumed command of the troops in the area, Major Hill remaining in charge of the Warfusée-Marcelcave sector.

Soon after dawn on March 30th the enemy strongly attacked along the Warfusée road, but the Bedfordshire Yeomanry, in spite of heavy losses, hung on to their position and repulsed the onslaught. This movement, however, was preliminary to a stronger effort, heralded by heavy artillery

Digitized by Google

Scene of the Gallant Stand of the Essex Yeomanry, March 28th-31st, 1918. Looking from Marcelcave, the German position, towards Villers Bretonneux.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

Essex Yeomanry Headquarters at Villers Bretonneux.

Digitized by Google

preparation, south of the railway and the troops there gave way before it. The situation of the Essex men became extremely critical. The infantry post on the railway line sent word to Major Hill that as their flank was exposed they proposed to retire, but, in reply, the Major bade them hold on at all costs, which they stoutly did, though in case the infantry were driven out the Yeomen dug a trench facing south to strengthen their flank. Meanwhile, Major Hill had reported to Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, whose headquarters were at Villers-Bretonneux, that his right was seriously threatened by the retirement of other troops and "B" Squadron, under Major Ruggles-Brise, was sent forward towards Marcelcave to strengthen the threatened flank. At 3 p.m. the enemy again shelled heavily and once more attacked, but the British line was becoming better established. The trenches had been sufficiently deepened to permit of cover and though there were casualties they were not serious. In addition to the Hotchkiss rifles, a Canadian machine gun rendered excellent support with its fire and the enemy gained very little ground.

The German bombardment almost demolished Villers-Bretonneux. "The chateau at this place, which was renowned for its collection of foreign birds, was suffering dreadful destruction. All the occupants of the vast cages and yards were now running loose in the roads. It was quite a common occurrence to meet an emu or an ostrich in the main road; all were scared by the tumult of war. Nearly all the inhabitants of the town had now fled west and many houses were in flames."

March 31st was also very wet and cold, but nothing more of importance happened. The position had been very much strengthened and even a few strands of wire had been run out in front. Small parties of infantry were constantly reporting. At 10 p.m. a brigade of the 5th Australian Division took over a line which had been held by two squadrons of the Essex Yeomanry and one squadron of the Bedfordshire Yeomanry for two days and nights and the Regiment marched back to Villers-Bretonneux and thence to Bois de Vaire, fatigued with the four days' continuous digging and fighting, but conscious that in a highly critical situation they had helped to save the line. Well might Major Hill write with pride: "Officers and men behaved splendidly under very trying circumstances. The sector of over 2,000 yards, when taken over, had no defences of any sort, and was held for the first twenty-four hours by a little over 100 men. If the enemy had occupied this sector they practically had control of Villers-Bretonneux, and from it they could command Amiens."

The new sector to which the Essex Yeomanry were allotted was also commanded by Colonel Whitmore and extended from Warfusée on the right to Hamel on the left, which had been held up to that time by dismounted parties of the 2nd and 9th Cavalry Brigades and those detachments of various arms which

Digitized by Google

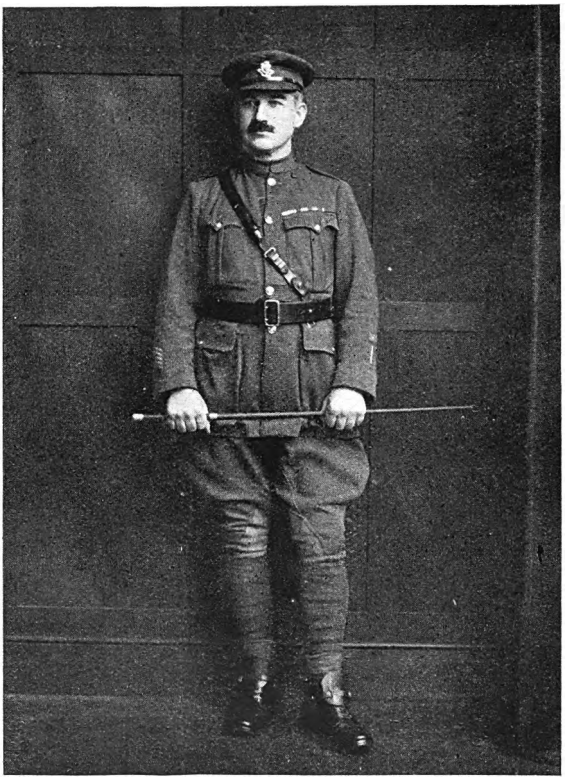
became known to fame as Carey's Force. Colonel Whitmore had under him 9th Lancers, 18th Hussars, Essex and Bedfordshire Yeomanry, 2nd Machine Gun Squadron, 6th United States Engineers, 3rd Corps School Lewis Gun Detachment, 352nd Electrical Mechanical Company and a few men of the 16th Infantry Division. Headquarters were established in a small red-brick shed in the Bois de Vaire near the road from Warfusée to Corbie. There was little activity to record, except shelling by the enemy and a British bombardment of Warfusée on the report of an enemy concentration in the valley near by. The Americans and several units were withdrawn and Colonel Whitmore could only hold the line thinly with the 9th Lancers, 18th Hussars, Essex and Bedfordshire Yeomanry and 2nd Machine Gun Squadron, with the 4th Dragoon Guards in reserve. On the night of April 3rd the 47th Brigade of the 14th Division took over the sector and the cavalry withdrew, leaving the machine gunners with the incoming troops. The Essex Yeomanry were the last of the formations to leave. Within two hours the Germans held the line, for as dawn broke they delivered a vehement attack, which met with some success, though they did not penetrate very far.

With April came the regretted breaking-up of the Essex Yeomanry, then at Bussy-lès-Daours. They were ordered to provide a squadron as a reinforcement to each of the regiments in the 1st Brigade and in consequence, on April 4th, 1918, "C" Squadron went to the 11th Hussars; "B" Squadron to the 2nd Dragoon Guards and "A" Squadron to the 5th Dragoon Guards, whilst details of personnel also joined the Queen's Own Oxfordshire Hussars. The senior officers were posted as follow : Lt.-Col. F. H. D. C. Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O., to the command of the 10th (P.W.O.) Royal Hussars; Major G. Gold to the Royal Air Force; Major A. Buxton, D.S.O., Musketry Instructor, Cavalry Corps; Major E. Hill, D.S.O., second-in-command, 15th Hussars; Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C. second-in-command, 4th Dragoon Guards. Thus it was that the Essex Yeomanry passed, after three and a half years of gallant and memorable service, into the ranks of other cavalry regiments, there to take part in the breaking of the German line and the advance to the Rhine. It was a bitter blow to officers and men that they could not serve together in the most glorious chapter in the history of the war, but the authorities decreed otherwise. They took the decision without complaint, did their uttermost for the regiments with which they became identified and though the Regiment survived not, they could not forget that they had been Essex Yeomen and played the game.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google



R.S.M. FARRELL, who served with the Regiment throughout its period of Active Service.

Digitized by Google

THE MARCH TO VICTORY.

The 1st Cavalry Brigade (Brig.-General E. Makins, C.B., D.S.O.), of the 1st Cavalry Division, had been heavily engaged in the desperate resistance to the last stages of the German offensive and had suffered considerable casualties. Immediately after the Essex Yeomanry had been incorporated into the Brigade a move was made to the Citadel, on the northern outskirts of Amiens, and there, on April 9th, information was received that the enemy had broken through the Portuguese front in the neighbourhood of Ploegsteert. A hurried transfer was effected to Wavans, then successively to Conchy-sur-Canche area, Fléchun area and Enquin-les-Mines. At the last-named place Lieut.-Colonel H. S. Sewell, D.S.O., 4th Dragoon Guards, became commander of the Brigade. Early in June a defensive line was reconnoitred east of Lillers, which it was feared might have to be held if the German offensive was sustained, but the need did not arise and the Brigade was on the move again, first to the Torcy area and thence to Raye-sur-Authie for a month's stay. In the middle of July the Brigade was transferred to Amplier and early in August to Montrelet, from which it was moved on the 6th under cover of darkness to Argœuvres, with the rest of the Division, in support of the offensive at Villers-Bretonneux on August 8th, which resulted in a brilliant advance by Australian and Canadian divisions. The cavalry were pushed up to hold the ground which was gained as a result of the thrust at Harbonnières. The 1st Cavalry Division went back to reserve on August 9th, but the stay was short, for at 2 a.m. on the 10th orders came for the Caix area, from whence there were successive moves to Mézerolles, Sarton, Authieule, Amplier, Houvin, Montenescourt, Nuncq, Orville, Martinsart, St. Pierre-Vaast Wood and Boucly. The Brigade took part in the second battle of Le Cateau, which, lasting from the 8th to 12th October, compelled the Germans to evacuate Cambrai and fall back behind the line of the Selle River, the prelude to the final British assault upon Maubeuge. The advance was rapid. The Brigade crossed the St. Quentin Canal at Riqueval on October 8th, and by the straight road which connected the Cambrai-St. Quentin road with the Cambrai-Le Cateau road they reached the valley west of Wiancourt and by 11 a.m. were at Vaux-le-Prêtre, expecting later to push on to Maretz. The attack was cancelled and next day the Division was in reserve to the Cavalry Corps. The British Commander-in-Chief wrote of the fighting on October 8th that "the cavalry again did valuable and gallant work, harrying the enemy in his retreat and preventing him from completing the destruction

Digitized by Google

of the railway which runs from St. Quentin to Busigny and Cambrai." The role was again offensive on October 10th, when 1st Brigade led the cavalry advance towards Le Cateau. The infantry penetrated as far as the Le Cateau-Neuvilly road and the Brigade was then ordered to Maretz, where it remained to the end of the month. In the early days of November the Brigade was in the La Capelle, Auchy and Rumegies areas and then at noon on November 11th, "News was received from the 1st Cavalry Division that hostilities ceased at 11.00 and that all troops were to stand fast. The Queen's Bays and the 5th Dragoon Guards were accordingly ordered to take up a line of outposts. The remainder of the Brigade was billeted round Leuze." The advance to the German frontier commenced on November 17th, 1st and 3rd Cavalry Divisions covering the front of the Second Army and the former reaching the boundary on November 29th. Then on December 1st came the greatest moment of the war, when the 1st Cavalry Division (Essex Yeomen with them) crossed the frontier. On December 6th the 2nd Cavalry Brigade was in Cologne—the first British troops there—and by the 8th the whole of the 1st Cavalry Division had also reached the Rhine and secured the river crossings. Thus though the Regiment had ceased to exist as the Essex Yeomanry, the majority of its members had the proud distinction of being among the first to enter the great Rhenish city.

LIEUT.-COLONEL WHITMORE'S SERVICE WITH THE 10TH ROYAL HUSSARS.

The 10th Royal Hussars, whom Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore commanded, were part of the 6th Cavalry Brigade of the 3rd Cavalry Division and supported the Canadian Corps in the attack of the Fourth Army on August 8th. That evening the 10th Hussars were pushing on towards Warvillers and Beaufort to relieve the pressure on the 1st Royal Dragoons, when Lieut.-Col. Whitmore was suddenly ordered to take over command of the Brigade from Brig-General A. Seymour, who had to go to Hospital sick, Capt. R. Gordon Canning, M.C., succeeding Col. Whitmore. An outpost line was established by the Brigade near Quesnel and next day the 3rd Cavalry Division went into Corps Reserve west of Caix. On August 10th, however, this division was again on the move, and the 6th Cavalry Brigade marched from Beaufort to Folies in support of the attack of the Canadian Cavalry Brigade upon Hill 100, the highest point of the road between Quesnel and Roye, and during which the headquarters of the Brigade were heavily shelled from west of Le Quesnoy and sustained several casualties. On August 15th Lieut.-Colonel Ewing Paterson, D.S.O., Inniskilling Dragoons, became brigadier of the 6th Cavalry Brigade and Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore resumed command of the 10th Hussars. At the end of August the regiment marched to Wailly, south-west of Arras, to be attached to the Canadian

Digitized by Google

Corps, and form part of an independent mobile force, under Brig.-General Brutinel, C.M.G., D.S.O., which was to exploit a successful attack on the Hindenburg Line, particularly the Drocourt-Quéant and Buissy Switch, west of Marquion, and, if possible, to capture the canal crossing at Marquion and form a bridgehead east of that place. This independent force was organized in three groups, the leading group being commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, consisting of the 10th Royal Hussars and the Canadian Light Horse, with a section of Field Artillery, a section of Machine Gun Corps (Cavalry) and a few heavy and light armoured cars and motor cyclists, the last-named for inter-communication. Headed by the armoured cars and followed by the Hussars, the leading group left St. Rohart factory on the Arras-Cambrai road on September 2nd, and reached a point about 1,000 yards east of Vis-en-Artois, when sharp and obstinate resistance by machine gun-fire prevented further advance. The 10th Royal Hussars rejoined the 6th Cavalry Brigade on September 5th. After some days' training the Cavalry Brigade were again advancing and Colonel Whitmore led the 10th Royal Hussars over the ground near Bihécourt, which had been cultivated in the previous Spring under his direction, and which, he noted, had been reaped and cleared by the enemy, who, from the appearance of the stubble, must have taken a fair crop. Early in October the 6th Cavalry Brigade took part in the operations which led to the occupation of Le Cateau, the 10th Royal Hussars assisting in the heavy fighting south of Honnechy. The Brigade later passed through Manancourt and Banteux, where many dead Germans were found, some with their hands in the act of firing machine guns and others as if they had been running forward with supplies of ammunition. Thence they marched across the battleground of Gouzeaucourt, where in the previous Autumn the Guards Division had thrust back the German advance. On October 6th, after a short stay at Manancourt, the Hussars were at Marquion, thence they went to Fretin. There were rumours of an armistice, but on the morning of November 11th, the position being still uncertain, the 6th Cavalry Brigade were ordered to occupy the Enghien-Soignies line. At 10.30, when at Leuze, the welcome news was received that hostilities would cease at 11 a.m. There were immediate celebrations, but there was difficulty in communicating with two troops of the 10th Hussars which had been ordered to obtain touch with the enemy. One was stopped within half a mile of Bassilly and as late as 12.30 p.m. was fired upon by a light gun. The other troop could not locate the Germans and did not rejoin the regiment until 8 o'clock upon the following morning (November 12th).

A week after the Armistice (November 18th) the Brigade was billeted near Saintes and from this village the three regiments

Digitized by Google

marched across the battlefield of Waterloo with drawn swords and saluted the monument as they passed in honour of their comrades, who, one hundred and three years before, had fought so gallantly and well. In December the 6th Cavalry Brigade was broken up. The cadre of the 3rd Dragoon Guards proceeded to England and the 10th Royal Hussars and the 1st Royal Dragoons, much reduced in strength owing to demobilization, proceeded to Königshoven and Cologne respectively and thus became part of the Army of Occupation. A squadron of the 10th Hussars provided the corps commander's escort at Spa and as the result of an introduction to the President of British Armistice Commission, Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore was privileged to listen to the proceedings of the Allied Commission. "The daily sittings," he said, "took place in the Grand Hotel Britannique in the large dining room. The members of the Allies' Commission always assembled in the Hall at the appointed hour. The members of the German Commission, being already seated in the room, would rise on the entry of General Nudant and his supporters. The proceedings were carried out in three languages, being interpreted in turn into German, French and English. All those who had the privilege of witnessing these events must have been struck by the firmness and dignity of General Nudant in his dealings with the German authorities present." Colonel Whitmore and an officer also had the unique privilege of being the first officers to enter Berlin with the exception of the British Military Mission. They arrived there in March, 1919, just after the Spartacist riots, and Colonel Whitmore thus describes the German capital: "The city of Berlin presented a very dilapidated appearance. Much damage had been done during the short period of the revolution. The streets were barricaded with barbed wire entanglements. Machine guns and trench mortars were in position, and manned by Hindenburg's new volunteer army. These guns were posted in windows occupying prominent places near important buildings and thoroughfares. Masses of soldiers in uniform, but without arms, were to be seen everywhere, but officers were conspicuous by their absence. The whole of the population might be described as being 'on edge,' and it was said that all theatres and places of amusement were packed night after night; dancing and recreation of all sorts seemed to prevail. Many of the large buildings were badly damaged by shell-fire, especially the Kaiser's own Schloss; the centre window overlooking the Lustgarten, from which he used to address the vast crowds who assembled to hear him, was entirely destroyed. The whole of the Schloss had been pillaged; even the clothes he wore had been removed and pictures which hung on his walls." Upon his return to Königshoven from Berlin Colonel Whitmore took leave of the 10th Royal Hussars and proceeded to England for demobilization.

Digitized by Google

He had a most cordial and gratifying send-off and the regimental band played " Auld Lang Syne " as he drove away.

FIRST BRITISH REGIMENT ACROSS THE RHINE COMMANDED BY AN ESSEX YEOMANRY OFFICER.

Distinction for the Regiment was associated with the occupation of the Rhine bridgehead at Cologne, for an Essex Yeomanry officer (Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C.) had the proud privilege of commanding the first British regiment to march across the river. It came about in this way. When the Essex Yeomanry was disbanded Major Ruggles-Brise was first sent to the 11th Hussars as second-in-command and then, three months later, to the same position with the 4th Royal Irish Dragoon Guards, with whom he remained until demobilized from Cologne, in March, 1919. The Dragoon Guards were part of the 2nd Cavalry Brigade, the leading brigade of the 1st Cavalry Division, and the latter was, as narrated above, the advance guard of the British march through Belgium into Germany. As the senior regiment of the Brigade, the 4th were the leading regiment on important ceremonial occasions. It so happened that the commanding officer was on leave for about a month at this time and so missed the whole of the advance and did not rejoin the unit until it had passed through Cologne to form the bridgehead. The command thus devolved on Major Ruggles-Brise. The 4th Dragoon Guards crossed the little stream, the Redwasser, dividing Belgium from Germany, at 9 a.m. exactly on December 1st, the 18th Hussars crossing simultaneously at a bridge a little lower down, followed by the 9th Lancers, these regiments forming, with the Dragoon Guards, the 2nd Cavalry Brigade. The advance was extremely interesting, though uneventful, except that the ravages of influenza reduced the strength very considerably and made the march difficult. " The way lay across a country of great hills rising to over 2,000ft., covered by wide stretches of forest, and cut by deep and narrow valleys, along which the roads wound in countless sudden curves." Spartacist riots had broken out in Cologne and at the urgent request of the Burgomaster the latter part of the cavalry march was hastened, so that the Rhenish city was reached two or three days ahead of the original time-table. Cologne was entered on Sunday, December 6th. The 4th Dragoon Guards led and were halted for some time on the great ceinture boulevard whilst some of the staff conferred with the Burgomaster. The streets were thronged with people and their curiosity was amazing. The troops were spick and span, looking the reverse of war-worn, and the contrast with the retreating Germans, who had passed through a few days earlier, evidently deeply impressed. Questions were innumerable. How long were we from England ? Were we show troops kept at home for ceremonial purposes ? No doubt we had only left England a few days earlier ? The attentions of

Digitized by Google

the crowd became so embarrassing that Major Ruggles-Brise had to put a ring of sentries round the adjutant and himself to keep the enquirers at arm's length. "They had been told by their authorities," wrote an officer, "to behave themselves, and behave themselves they did. They expressed neither hatred, dismay, nor shame—only curiosity! One woman as she walked by turned her head and spat. I admired her more than all the others put together!" After an hour's wait orders came to mount and occupy and hold the Hohenzollern Bridge at the British end, whilst the Germans held the opposite bank. Major Ruggles-Brise marched the 4th Dragoon Guards into the Domplatz, the square facing the Cathedral, and there the trumpeters blew a fanfare. Thus for the first time for many a year the walls re-echoed to the sound of British trumpets. When the British end of the bridge had been occupied an officers' patrol met a German patrol half-way across and exchanged mutual guarantees to keep the peace. The Regiment then went into barracks. Hardly had the men settled down when a warning came of the possibility of Spartacist outrage upon the weak British garrison, but, happily, the night passed without incident. By the Armistice terms the Allies were not to cross the Rhine until December 12th, and for this day great preparations were made, the chief incident to be a march past before General Sir H. H. Plumer as the troops crossed by the Hohenzollern Bridge. British troops were constantly arriving, however. The city was becoming congested and room had to be found. It was accordingly arranged, in agreement with the German authorities, that the 4th Dragoon Guards should cross the Rhine on December 11th and occupy the Deutz Cavalry Barracks on the other side. In the afternoon of that day, therefore, the Regiment crossed the Rhine and took up its new quarters. This improvisation thus had the effect of causing one British regiment to move into the bridgehead zone a day in advance of the British Army and to spend a night alone on the east bank of the Rhine. Furthermore, it did not deprive the 4th Dragoon Guards of pride of place in the formal march past of the next day. After an early reveille the Regiment re-crossed by a bridge higher up and formed up with its head on the Domplatz, in the van of the British column. At the given signal they led the way. "I remember," wrote Major Ruggles-Brise, "straining my voice to give the 'Eyes right!' so that it could be heard above the strains of the Royal Horse Guards' band, who played us past the General. A proud moment for the British Empire! A proud moment for the British Army! A proud moment for the British General! The thought uppermost in my mind, however, was that it was also a proud moment for the Essex Yeomanry! How I longed to be with my old comrades."

THE REGIMENTAL SPIRIT.

This narrative will close with an incident in the Afghan frontier

Digitized by Google

fighting of 1919, showing the spirit of loyal comradeship that pervaded all ranks of the Regiment. A Yeomanry officer was walking through a machine gun camp at Risalpur on the North-West Frontier, when outside one of the huts he noticed an Essex Yeomanry badge worked in small stones. He at once made enquiry and found ten or twelve men from the 2nd Battalion, who had been posted to the Machine Gun Corps. Soon afterwards an advance was made through the Khyber Pass into Afghanistan and an Essex Yeoman was sniped by the enemy and buried where he fell. An order was promulgated soon afterwards that no one, alive or dead, must be left in the hands of the enemy, as they practised torture and desecration; for a similar reason no trace of burial of the dead must remain, as the bodies would be dug up. The fighting in Afghanistan continued for three months, when at last orders came for India. The Yeomen who were left, true to their dead comrade, immediately recovered his body and by some means or other transferred it back to British territory, where it was re-buried.

Digitized by Google

THE DRAFT-FINDING UNITS.

A reference to the other units of the Regiment which supplied drafts to the first line in France ought not to be omitted. The Essex Yeomanry attracted large numbers of Essex men to its ranks right from the outbreak of war and as early as September, 1914, the 2/1st Essex Yeomanry was formed at Colchester and, by a happy circumstance, commanded in its early days by Colonel R. B. Colvin. In October this unit was transferred to Wickham Market and for a time lay next to the 1st Essex Yeomanry, who were then at Melton. Great difficulties had to be surmounted in equipping and horsing the men and it was only by considerable exertion that a few remounts were obtained for mounted drill. The saddlery for these animals was given by Mrs. Calverley, of Down Hall, Mr. J. Swire, M.F.H., Harlow, by the Commanding Officer and others. Special attention was paid to physical training and some dummy horses were of very great assistance. Gradually more remounts arrived and also a heterogeneous supply of arms. On New Year Day, 1915, the 2/1st, then fully equipped, were transferred to Huntingdon and, in the same month, when Colonel Colvin was appointed to command the 2nd London Mounted Brigade, he handed over to Lieut.-Colonel the Hon. Alwyne H. F. Greville, C.V.O., who subsequently wrote, "The efficiency of the Regiment was entirely owing to the wonderful start given to it by Colonel Colvin and to the excellence of the three adjutants with whom I had the pleasure to be associated. Also to Capt. W. R. Hadler, quartermaster, who, from his previous training in the Regular Army and in the first line, was invaluable in organization and equipment. Indeed, all ranks played the game throughout and it was the greatest honour and pleasure that I could possibly experience to have commanded such a regiment." When Colonel Greville took over the adjutant was Captain H. H. Gepp, who also was very proud of the second line, for he has written, "We had at various times a splendid regiment, which would have done very well anywhere and it was a pity it never had its chance." The 2/1st was brigaded with Lovat's Scouts at this period and supplied large drafts of officers and men to the first line owing mainly to the casualties sustained in the charge of May 13th. In June, 1915, the unit, which was part of the coast defence force, was moved by road to the Cavalry Barracks, Hounslow, where it remained until March, 1916, during which period it paraded before the Inspector-General of Cavalry (General Milner), who said it was the best second line Yeomanry regiment that he had inspected. A transfer was effected to Great Bentley, Essex, where the 2/1st were accommodated in huts.

Digitized by Google

The chief events were an inspection by Lord French and training at Clacton. From July to October, 1916, the men were under canvas at Leybourne Park, Kent, and then were moved to billets and huts at Brasted, Kent, for the winter. Captain Gepp vacated the adjutancy in November for active service in France and Captain H. W. de Zoete succeeded him. Whilst in camp in the summer of 1917 at the Wilderness, Sevenoaks, the 2/1st were inspected by General Sir Arthur Paget—not on horses, however, but on cycles. It was one of the last of the Yeomanry regiments stationed at home to be dismounted. At the end of January, 1918, the 2/1st were shipped to Ireland and were for some time in barracks at Castlebar, with a detachment at Westport. In July of that year Captain Gibbon took over the adjutancy from Captain de Zoete, who was transferred to the War Office, but early in 1919 that officer resumed his post with the Regiment. The men were in huts at the Curragh from July, 1918, to February 6th, 1919, the date of disbandment, and shortly before which time Colonel Greville had resigned his command.

The 3/1st Essex Yeomanry was formed early in 1915 at Stanway, Colchester, and intended at first for service overseas. The commander was Lieut.-Colonel E. Moore Tennant, late 20th Deccan Horse, and upon his transfer abroad, Major P. C. G. Hayward, M.B.E., was appointed to the position. He instituted a recruiting march throughout Essex and the East End of London, in which three officers and one hundred men were employed for a fortnight and which produced very good results. Changes in the organization of cavalry units resulted in the 3/1st finding drafts for the 2/1st, then at Huntingdon. It was subsequently reduced to a two squadron basis and utilized for draft-finding for the first line in France and as a unit for the reception of officers, N.C.O's. and men returned from the front on account of wounds and sickness. After a year's stay at Stanway the 3/1st was, in 1916, sent to Aldershot, where it was attached to the 2nd Reserve Cavalry Brigade and still used for drafting purposes. Subsequently, on the general pooling of cavalry drafts in 1917, the third line ceased to exist as a separate unit and all ranks were merged in the 2nd Reserve Cavalry Brigade.

Digitized by Google

TACTICAL EMPLOYMENT OF THE ESSEX YEOMANRY.

During the Peninsular War—Oman tells us—as a rule almost without exception, infantry in square, whether British or French, were never broken even by very desperate and gallant cavalry charges. Moreover, there were comparatively few fights between cavalry and cavalry with fairly equal numbers. Wellington's reluctance to use his cavalry in the early stages of that memorable campaign has been attributed to the relatively small force by which his army was served, but even later, when the deficiency had been to a large extent made good, he was not more inclined to use his cavalry in mass and there is evidence that this was due to his lack of confidence in the tactical skill of the superior officers. There is probably another reason, and that was a realization of the increased fire efficiency of infantry. Wellington relied upon the steady and controlled musketry of his foot men in line, had faith and knowledge that it was invincible. Yet in assessing the service which the cavalry rendered to Wellington it should be remembered that there was no outstanding instance of the army, or even a division, " being surprised for want of vigilance on the part of its cavalry screen. . . . The most admirable achievement during the war was undoubtedly that of the 1st Hussars of the King's German Legion, who, assisted afterwards by the 14th and 16th Light Dragoons, kept for four months (March to May, 1810) the line of the Agueda and Azava, 40 miles long, against a fourfold strength of French cavalry, without once letting a hostile reconnaissance through, losing a picket or even a vidette, or sending a piece of false information back to General Craufurd, whose front they were covering." The cavalry were the eyes and the ears of the army, and their role in Peninsular warfare was accordingly not less important than in earlier days when shock tactics could be exploited with greater prospect of success. In the hundred years which passed ere the British nation was again to grapple with hostile armies in Western Europe, fire power, fire control and fire discipline had increased to such an extent that in several instances during the early stages of the war the rapid rifle fire of a British infantry battalion was mistaken for machine guns. The massing of artillery and its increased weight of metal and manœuvring power had further circumscribed the opportunities which British cavalry could seize of destroying enemy formations. In the early stages of the recent War, when armies were in rapid movement, the cavalry divisions of the British army did valuable work in providing a screen for infantry and in protecting the army's flanks. For a time it seemed as if the use of cavalry would

Digitized by Google

be in accordance with the most ardent hopes of its enthusiasts. Within three months, however, each army or group of armies had dug in. The line solidified and the use of cavalry against entrenchments, protected by wire and backed by heavy artillery, was impossible. Sheer necessity of the times gave the cavalry another role, that of infantrymen maintaining the line, yet never ceasing to be trained for the day when it was believed the squadrons would be launched against the enemy, either to widen the gap or to seize advanced tactical positions. At the time of departure of the Essex Yeomanry for France the cavalry were fighting, dismounted, as infantry and assisting to hold muddy trenches and earthen breastworks in the series of bitter contests known as the First Battle of Ypres. Hence it was necessary not only to train incoming cavalry to act as such, but they had to be taught the rudiments of trench warfare in readiness for action as dismounted cavalry utilized as infantry. The first employment of the Essex Yeomanry at Frezenberg Ridge, May, 1915, was in the latter capacity, whilst two years later, at the capture of Monchy-le-Preux, they had the distinction of leading the operation by means of which it was sought to break through and occupy important tactical positions with cavalry moving at a greater speed than was possible to infantry. The Cavalry Corps was again concentrated for the Battle of Cambrai, November-December, 1917, but beyond a squadron or two it was never utilized. The cavalry regiments were kept in being and carefully trained as horsemen, but it seemed that their use as such belonged to the past, except in the great open spaces of the Near East, with lines less strongly held by men and munitions. Then, suddenly, came the German offensive in March, 1918, when the cavalry proved as potent an arm as at any other period of the war; in fact, it is difficult to conceive what might have happened in those trying days had it not been for their defensive mobility. Their work at this critical time was appreciated to the full by the Commander-in-Chief in his despatch relating to the defence of Amiens. Then, again, from August, 1918, onwards, the cavalry was actively employed in pursuit of an enemy whose morale was rapidly deteriorating. At that time the Essex Yeomanry had been distributed among other regiments of the 1st Cavalry Brigade, so that there is, unfortunately, no separate record of its work as a tactical unit.

When mobilized, the Essex Yeomanry, classified as Dragoons, had been trained as cavalry, but the double role—that of cavalry and infantry—which they had to discharge in France and Belgium caused a revision of the training syllabus, which was drawn up to cover the headings given below, each having a sub-division for instruction in bombing, gas, etc. :—

(*a*) Action for a reconnoitring squadron.
(*b*) Co-operation with cavalry in battle.
(*c*) Co-operation with infantry in battle.

Digitized by Google

(*d*) Outposts and rearguards.
(*e*) Advanced guard action.
(*f*) Advanced guard. Forcing a defile. Fire action and mobility.
(*g*) Reconnaissance, protection, close reconnaissance, with attack and capture of enemy's position.
(*h*) Combination of fire and shock action.
(*i*) Dismounted cavalry in an infantry role.
(*j*) The value of machine guns.

The introduction of the Hotchkiss automatic rifle to each troop in the winter of 1915 was of considerable value as a reinforcement of the fire strength. It was some time before it could be used with facility and much special instruction was needed. The mechanism of these rifles being so delicate, it was of the utmost importance that they should be kept clean and consequently all those who used them were required to know not only how to strip and assemble them again, but to do so quickly in the distracting confusion of action. In the Monchy action (April, 1917) the Hotchkiss rifle proved its value in all stages of the engagement. Its moral effect upon the enemy was most marked, thus affording time to strengthen the defences. Like other fast firing apparatus, it was not always reliable and only one rifle remained in action with the Essex Yeomanry during the whole of that stormy day's fighting.

It was essential that all officers and other ranks should realize the value of co-operation with machine guns and this formed an essential feature of the training, particular attention also being given to map reading. Horse management was constantly taught. (*a*) How to groom a horse; (*b*) How to water and feed; (*c*) How to deal with simple ailments, such as sore backs, girth galls, brushing, etc; (*d*) The principles of shoeing, etc.

As far as possible specialists were kept constantly at training and instruction in their particular subjects. Bombing, Hotchkiss rifles, demolition, signals, stretcher bearing were all subjects in which knowledge and practice were deemed essential. Casualties created continual vacancies, but, nevertheless, the work went on.

The Maxim machine gun section (two guns), which was part of the organization of every cavalry regiment at the commencement of the war, was eventually detached therefrom. The personnel thus released was transformed into machine gun squadrons, each cavalry brigade having its own squadron. Before the change occurred the machine gun section of the Essex Yeomanry was in action with the rest of the Regiment at the Battle of Frezenberg Ridge (May, 1915), where it rendered good service, but suffered heavy casualties. After that it was augmented by the machine gun section of the Yorkshire Hussars under Lieut. (afterwards Captain) Tom Preston (son of Mr. Harry Preston, of Moreby, Yorkshire).

The Essex Yeomanry in their period of service were tried by many emergencies which tested their efficiency as cavalry:

Digitized by Google

(1) Action as infantry, being deputed to charge on foot, together with the Royal Horse Guards and the 10th (P.W.O.) Royal Hussars, and take a position defended by enemy infantry (Frezenberg Ridge, May, 1915);
(2) Utilization as cavalry and their employment as such in an endeavour to pass by a town and capture tactical positions three miles beyond; the town was not held as anticipated and accordingly the cavalry changed their role and garrisoned the place as infantry and held it against the enemy reaction (Monchy-le-Preux, April, 1917);
(3) Use as cavalry to obtain touch with the enemy in the defensive operations against the German offensive, and then as infantry to hold a position (Villers-Bretonneux, March, 1918), and
(4) Employment as cavalry to keep the enemy on the move and to co-operate with infantry in seizing tactical positions, providing flank guards and exploiting success to the utmost capacity. (Allied Advance, August-November, 1918).

Military ability of a high order was displayed by officers and men of the Territorial Army and in such an efficient regiment as the Essex Yeomanry there were many. Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, in addition to writing a text book on cavalry training, served with Brig.-General Ewing Paterson, D.S.O., as a sub-committee in January, 1919, to make recommendations for the revision of the chapters dealing with tactics in "Cavalry Training."

Digitized by Google

RE-FORMATION OF THE REGIMENT.

The Territorial Force was reconstituted as the Territorial Army on February 16th, 1920. Steps were taken to re-form the Essex Yeomanry under Lieut.-Colonel E. Hill, D.S.O., T.D., and it went into camp for annual training, 200 strong, at Clacton in May, 1921. Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C., was second-in-command, and Captain R. W. Sparrow, M.C., 20th Hussars, was Adjutant. The three squadron leaders were: "A," Major J. O. Parker; "B," Major R. A. Thomson; "C," Major R. G. Proby. Towards the the end of 1921, however, the Army Council decided to transform most of the Yeomanry regiments into artillery and accordingly on November 1st, 1921, the Essex unit became the 104th (Essex Yeomanry) Brigade, R.F.A., with headquarters at Chelmsford. The Essex Yeomanry badges were retained on the cap and collar, with Y.R.F.A. on the shoulder in place of the usual T.R.F.A. The brigade forms part of the Army troops and is not in a divisional unit, though it is attached to the 54th (East Anglian) Division for training. Two batteries (413th and 414th) were formed, which are regarded as the successors of "A" and "C" Squadrons respectively, with headquarters of the 413th Battery at Colchester and of the 414th Battery at Harlow. All the officers required for the new formation (12) transferred from the Yeomanry, while about 140 other ranks also volunteered to become artillerymen. The first adjutant was Captain O. T. Frith, R.F.A. In May, 1922, the Brigade went into camp at Reed Hall, Colchester, at full strength, viz., 15 officers and 215 other ranks. The weather was exceptionally good, the regular gunners at Colchester lent horses and instructors and the men made great progress, being congratulated by the inspecting officer (Colonel Stanley Clarke, C.M.G., D.S.O., R.A.). In the winter of 1922 the 233rd R.F.A. Brigade Signal Section was raised at Brentwood. Although part of the Royal Corps of Signals, this unit is trained and administered by the 104th Brigade and regards itself as part of the Essex Yeomanry. The Brigade and the Signal Section went in May, 1923, for the first practice camp at Larkhill and although the weather was vile and the camp desolate, an instructive time was spent. In the Artillery Association Competition the Brigade, still at full strength, shot and manœuvred well. The 414th Battery obtained 62 per cent. and 413th 61 per cent., about half-way up the list of the Territorial batteries then competing, a most satisfactory result after such short training. The Stradbroke Cup was awarded the Brigade by the Association. The annual training in 1924 was

Digitized by Google

Group of Officers, Warrant Officers and N.C.O.'s of the 104th (Essex Yeomanry) Brigade, R.F.A., at the Annual Training in 1922.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

at Bishop's Stortford. Every endeavour is made in the new unit to retain the old Yeomanry traditions of horsemanship. The Essex Territorial Force Association have purchased extra horses, which are kept at Chelmsford, to enable Yeomen in the locality to practise riding. All the Hunts in Essex have agreed to allow N.C.O's. and men to hunt in uniform, which assists training and is also an inducement to recruiting. Brig.-General R. B. Colvin, C.B., was appointed Hon. Colonel in 1922.

Digitized by Google

THE FIGHT FOR BATTLE HONOURS.

At the end of 1922 a Regimental Committee was set up, under the chairmanship of the Colonel, Brig.-General R. B. Colvin, C.B., in order to forward to the Army Council the necessary application for the award of Battle Honours to the Essex Yeomanry. The task was promptly completed, for the conclusions of the Committee were submitted to the Battle Honours Committee of the War Office on January 19th, 1923. For some months nothing more was heard of the matter, but on September 26th Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O., was informed by the War Office that as the Essex Yeomanry were used as Cavalry reinforcements for the period April, 1918, to the November following, they, in consequence, ceased for that time to be a regimental unit of the Expeditionary Force. The Regiment was not, therefore, entitled to the battle honours claimed between those dates. The distinctions refused were in respect of the advance in Picardy (August 8th to September 3rd) and the breaking of the Hindenburg Line, with the series of operations associated with it—St. Quentin Canal (2nd October), Beaurevoir (3rd-5th October) and Cambrai (8th-9th October).

The decision affected four Yeomanry regiments, the Leicestershire, Bedfordshire and North Somerset Yeomanry being similarly placed to the Essex unit. This failure to recognize honours which it was felt were rightfully earned was met by a decision to send a deputation from the four regiments concerned to the War Office and accordingly, on February 27th, 1924, Brig.-General Colvin and Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore, representing the four regiments, were received by the Adjutant-General (Lieut.-General Sir R. D. Whigham, K.C.B.). It was urged that the exclusion was both unreasonable and unfair, but, in reply, General Whigham pointed out that the decision followed the ruling principle that war honours could only be awarded to units which were in existence at the time the battles were fought. That was to say, the unit must have existed in the order of battle of the British Expeditionary Force and that headquarters and 50 per cent. of the strength were present in the area and on the dates defined. Colonel Whitmore made the practical suggestion that this obligation could be met by recognizing the Brigade as the unit. The Adjutant-General thought this a reasonable way out of the difficulty and promised to lay it before the Army Council.

On April 12th the War Office regretted they were unable to alter the decision previously given, Sir B. Cubitt adding: "I am to assure you that the Army Council fully appreciate the gallant conduct of, and valuable services rendered by, the cavalry

Digitized by Google

regiments which the Yeomanry respectively reinforced, but they are, nevertheless, in agreement with the opinion expressed by the Committee on Battle Honours, viz., that to make any award of honours to the Yeomanry portion of the Regiments concerned during the period April to November, 1918, would have the effect of entirely undermining the principles on which battle honours have been awarded." The Essex Territorial Association forcibly expressed the view that "the principles on which battle honours have been awarded would in no way whatsoever be undermined by granting the request of the four regiments concerned, which is that these regiments should participate in the same battle honours as the Brigades in which they were absorbed after April 4th, 1918."

Lieut.-General Sir Charles T. McM. Kavanagh, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., who commanded the Cavalry Corps, was asked to use his influence in the matter. This he readily did and no one worked harder or more enthusiastically to obtain the concession; moreover, he was successful in enlisting the powerful aid of F.M. Earl Haig in that behalf, whilst the Yeomanry regiments also had the cordial and influential support of the Lords Lieutenant of the respective counties.

The Battle Honours Committee, however, refused to change its view and Brig.-General Colvin pregnantly summed up the situation in the following letter to the War Office, dated June 27th: "Whilst appreciating to the full the value of the honours granted, the Regiment feels very deeply the distinction which has been drawn between the Essex Yeomanry and the other regiments of the Cavalry Brigade in which it served after April, 1918. The Essex Yeomanry is still hoping that this discrepancy will be removed, as it cannot fail to have a marked adverse effect on the traditions of the Regiment in years to come." The struggle went on and efforts were concentrated upon showing that although the squadrons had been separated, the regiments still existed, that their records were maintained as separate units and that all promotions, casualties and postings were in the name of the Yeomanry regiments. Lord Haig was informed in September that the War Office could not alter its view and that the Army Council regretted they could not make an exception in the cases of the Yeomanry regiments without entirely upsetting the principles adopted, which had been rigidly adhered to.

General Colvin sent a further letter, dated October 7th, 1924, to the War Office, but before it was received the latter had again refused the request. An appeal to suspend action until they had General Colvin's letter resulted in another communication, dated October 16th, stating that the decision of the Army Council remaining unaltered, the lists of battle honours would be submitted for the King's approval. In General Colvin's letter it was pointed out that the principle of headquarters and

Digitized by Google

50 per cent. of the personnel being present in action had not been observed in respect of the battle honours for 1914 awarded to the 1st and 2nd Life Guards and the Royal Horse Guards. A Household Cavalry regiment went out with the Expeditionary Force in August, 1914, but it consisted of one squadron each of the Blues and the 1st and 2nd Life Guards. It was not until October, 1914, that the Household Cavalry Brigade landed at Zeebrugge and Ostend, having been formed at Ludgershall the month previously and made up to war strength by reservists from other cavalry regiments—Hussars to the Blues, Lancers to the 2nd Life Guards and Dragoons to the 1st Life Guards.

In December there came a change of Government and Brig.-General Colvin and Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore approached the new Secretary of State for War (Sir Laming Worthington Evans, Member for Colchester), but again without effect. The War Minister's contention was that the Yeomanry regiments had ceased to be corporate units and that consequently the separate squadrons lost their identity. In fact, the officer commanding the 5th Dragoon Guards was quoted as saying that the personnel of the Essex Yeomanry squadron was split up amongst the headquarters and three squadrons of his regiment, wearing the badge and numeral of the 5th Dragoon Guards. The officer commanding the 9th Cavalry Brigade, to which the Bedfordshire Yeomanry were allotted, stated that each of the three regiments used the squadron allotted to them to stiffen their existing squadrons, and the men of the Bedfordshires, "in most loyal fashion, eventually put up the badge of the regiment to which they had been allotted." "The Yeomanry regiments," added Sir L. Worthington Evans, "therefore, had no corporate existence as regiments or even as squadrons during the period in question and, that being so, they are precluded from the award of a battle honour, which can only be earned by a unit which fights as a corporate body. If they fought as members of any corporate bodies, those bodies were as the cavalry regiments to which they were attached."

Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore replied with spirit and lucid argument to this contention in a letter dated January 5th, 1925, which merits quotation in full: "1. The Essex, Bedford, Leicester and North Somerset Yeomanry were absorbed in the *strength* of regiments in Cavalry Corps, not into the *establishment* of the regiments concerned. This is convincingly proved by the fact that the introduction of officers and other ranks in no way interfered with promotions in the regiments to which the personnel of the Yeomanry were attached. 2. It is obvious that the Yeomanry regiments continued to exist throughout the whole period of the war and after, because at headquarters, 3rd Echelon, Rouen, the records of the regiments were kept as *units*, and all promotions, casualties and postings were in the name of the

Digitized by Google

Yeomanry regiments. 3. As regards the wearing of badges and numerals, the reason for this is to be found as far back as Cavalry Corps and Divisional Orders of 1917, when an order was issued that when officers and other ranks became attached to other units they were to wear the badge of the unit to which they were attached. 4. The 'main principle' mentioned in the letter from A.G. 10, dated 12th April, 1924, which governs the distribution of battle honours, is to the effect that the headquarters and 50 per cent. of the strength of the unit must have been present in a defined area. It would appear, however, that this is no longer applicable since the Household Cavalry have received honours for engagements when they had only 33 per cent. of their strength present, and this without their headquarters, during the early stages of the war. Unless discrimination in favour of the Household Cavalry is allowed, the four Yeomanry regiments which were employed with their full strength have a more substantial claim to receive honours for engagements during the concluding stages of the war. 5. Divisional orders in April, 1918, provided that squadrons of the Yeomanry regiments should remain intact when they became attached as reinforcements to the 1st, 3rd, 6th and 9th Brigades in April, 1918. These orders were carried out as far as was possible and one regiment did, in fact, carry this out to the end. The inaccuracy of the statement of the O.C. 5th Dragoon Guards as to the Yeomanry becoming '5th Dragoon Guards for the time' is easily proved by reference to records kept by the 3rd Echelon. I hope and believe that I have fairly stated the case on behalf of the Yeomanry regiments and have substantiated the following four points: (i) That these four regiments of Yeomanry did exist as units throughout the period concerned for reasons stated in paragraphs 1 and 2. (ii) That the question of badges and numerals is disposed of by paragraph 3. (iii) That a precedent has long been in existence for part only of cavalry regiments without headquarters to receive battle honours noted in paragraph 4. (iv) That, in fact, one regiment, at least, did keep its squadrons intact during the period under review, as mentioned in your letter of 23rd December, and in consequence has strengthened its claim for battle honours; also that it was the intention of Cavalry Corps that all squadrons should be kept intact as far as possible for the express purpose of 'identity' commented on in paragraph 5. Finally, I would urge as strongly as possible that the decision arrived at by the Army Council may be reconsidered; otherwise, it is certain that these four regiments will have every reason to believe that they have been unjustly and unreasonably treated by their own country; and their grievance will be a lasting one. Leicestershire, Somersetshire, Bedfordshire and Essex are only claiming for the Yeomanry cavalry for their respective counties those battle honours which for all time will show that their contribution at the end of the war

Digitized by Google

was equal to their contribution at the beginning of the war. The commanding officers of these units respectfully suggest that the 'unit' for this special purpose may be the 'Brigade' in the place of 'Regiment.' By this means their respective regiments would be entitled to the battle honours of the Brigade to which they, for the time being, were attached. They maintain that if ever there was a case where any exception to a rule should be made it is this one; and they also submit that in so far as it is acknowledged that these four Yeomanry regiments occupy a unique position, it will not be possible for such recognition to be quoted in other cases as a precedent, and that although it may be of little importance to the country whether or not they receive these few additional battle honours, it means a lot to those regiments concerned."

The Secretary of State remained unconvinced by the argument: "I have examined your re-statement of the case with equal care to see whether it contains any fresh points which would justify me in departing from the conclusions at which I had arrived. To be quite frank, I do not think that it does. The real crux of the matter is that these Yeomanry regiments did, in plain fact, lose their corporate identity as fighting units from the date they were distributed among the various cavalry regiments and, this being so, they are ineligible, both under the spirit and the letter of the regulations governing the awards of battle honours, for the additional honours they claim. I do not think there is any substance in the point you make regarding 'strength' as opposed to 'establishment.' The 'establishment,' so far as it existed in a physical sense, was at 3rd Echelon, was not a fighting unit and took no part in the actions concerned. So far as the Household Cavalry are concerned, the decision to allow battle honours to those regiments in respect of the composite regiments was taken, rightly or wrongly, in accordance with an established precedent, but, even so, there is no analogy between them and the Yeomanry regiments. In these circumstances, it is, believe me, with very sincere regret that I find myself unable to reverse the original decision."

Those who were representing the cause of the four Yeomanry regiments refused to be dismayed and through the Army Committee of the House of Commons they persisted in the effort. The Secretary of State for War again relied on the arguments of the Battle Honours Committee. Sir Robert Sanders, Member for the Wells Division of Somerset, Minister for Agriculture in the former Conservative Government, took up the case with enthusiasm and in the House of Commons, on March 16th, 1925, in a debate upon the Army Estimates, he seized the opportunity for once again appealing for full recognition of the war record of the Yeomanry regiments. Instancing especially the North Somerset Yeomanry, he urged that when a complete squadron was attached to each regiment of the 6th Cavalry Brigade (as

Digitized by Google

was the case with Essex Yeomanry in the 1st Cavalry Brigade), the separate existence of the unit was still recognized. The third echelon was retained at Rouen; all promotions of the officers and non-commissioned officers were recorded there, together with the casualties and honours and awards, as members of the North Somerset Yeomanry. He added, "I believe the rule that is quoted for refusing them these honours is, in the first place, that a regiment must be in the order of battle. Undoubtedly each squadron of these regiments was in the order of battle. Another requirement laid down that the headquarters and 50 per cent. of the strength of the men must have been present at the battle. I do not know about the headquarters, but certainly over 50 per cent. of the men were present at each of these battles. Consequently, these regiments feel particularly sore, because they were informed that an exception was made to this rule in the case of the Household Cavalry in the retreat from Mons, where each regiment sent one squadron to form a composite regiment, and yet all of them got battle honours for the period." The reply of the Secretary of State for War covered familiar ground. He would not agree that the claim could be admitted unless the regulations were so stretched that many other regiments would be entitled to re-consideration. He represented a division of a county (Essex) with one of the Yeomanry regiments concerned, and he certainly would, if he could, bring them within the rules governing the grant of war honours.

Sir Robert Sanders and Major E. A. Ruggles-Brise, Member for Maldon Division of Essex, refused to rest content and again and again every argument that could be used was employed to obtain justice for the four regiments. Nothing more was heard, officially, however, until June 9th, when a letter was received from Colonel G. T. Brierley, for the Director of Personal Services, stating that the claim of the Essex Yeomanry and the three other Yeomanry regiments was again under consideration and that in order to assist the investigation it was necessary to know the battles for which the Regiments desired recognition. The letter went on to say: "In no case can a claim be submitted for scrutiny which has not been gained by the Cavalry Brigade as a whole or, in other words, it must be a battle in which the whole fighting strength of the Essex Yeomanry participated. Under these conditions the Essex Yeomanry would appear to be eligible for—'Amiens,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'St. Quentin' Canal,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'Cambrai, 1918' and 'Pursuit to Mons.'" This, in fact, showed that the Army Council were adopting Colonel Whitmore's original suggestion, submitted to the Adjutant-General at the first interview in February, 1924. The announcement of the grant of the additional honours to the four regiments was made in the House of Commons on July 15th, 1925, and gazetted in the August following.

In securing reversal of the previous decision, the supporters

Digitized by Google

of the Yeomanry cause had the deepest personal sympathy of the Secretary of State for War and he did his utmost to find a means whereby the previous decision of the Army Council could be modified. No one knew better than he did the disappointment which the counties concerned would suffer if their regiments were deprived of official recognition of the full list of engagements in which they had fought. The Essex Yeomanry accordingly look upon Sir Laming Worthington Evans as a friend who has helped them to bring about a satisfactory conclusion to what might have been a grievance having an influence for many years to come.

The following is the list of war honours which stand to the credit of the Essex Yeomanry (Dragoons), the names in capital letters being those permitted to be borne on the colours or appointments: "YPRES, 1915," "St. Julien," "FREZENBERG," "LOOS," "ARRAS, 1917," "Scarpe, 1917," "SOMME, 1918," "AMIENS," "Albert, 1918," "HINDENBURG LINE," "ST. QUENTIN CANAL," "Beaurevoir," "Cambrai, 1918," "PURSUIT TO MONS," "FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914-18."

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX I.

The order set out below is that by which the Essex Yeomanry were first brought up to the front line near Ypres.

8th Cavalry Brigade.
Operation Order No. 4.

2nd February, 1915.

Reference Map: Belgium Sheet 28 1/40,000.

1. The 3rd Cavalry Division will move to Ypres to-morrow to take over a section of the French line.

2. The move will take place in two echelons as follows :—

1st Echelon (under Brig.-General Kavanagh, C.B., C.V.O., D.S.O.) in order of march—

2nd Life Guards.
Leicester Yeomanry.
1st Life Guards.
" A " Squadron, Essex Yeomanry.
Royal Horse Guards.

'Buses in above order to rendezvous at Cross Roads south of ST. SYLVESTRE CAPPEL at 3.30 p.m.

Brigade rendezvous on HAZEBROUCK—EBBLINGHAM road, ½ mile East of L of WALLON CAPPEL, at 2.45 p.m.

G.O.C. 7th Cavalry Brigade will detail an officer to superintend the marshalling of the 'buses at the rendezvous.

At the above hour this Echelon will move off under orders of G.O.C. 7th Cavalry Brigade via STEENVOORDE, POPERINGHE, VLAMERTINGHE to YPRES.

'Bus head will be at the road junction centre of Square i 8b.

On arrival at 'bus head the men will dismount under orders of a Divisional Staff Officer (no man to leave 'buses until so ordered). Each 'bus load will immediately fall in and march along the YPRES-MENIN road, where regiments will form up on the left of the road under orders of a Divisional Staff Officer.

As soon as each regiment is formed up, the Commanding Officer will report to the Divisional Staff Officer, when it will march off, immediately followed by its Maxim Guns and Water Cart.

Arrangements have been made with the French for one guide to join each Squadron at the HALTE and lead it into its particular section of the trenches.

2nd Echelon (under Brig.-General Campbell) in order of march—

10th Royal Hussars.
Essex Yeomanry (less 1 squadron).

(Brigade rendezvous as on Page 1 at 4.15 p.m.).

6th Cavalry Brigade.

Digitized by Google

'Buses will assemble at the same rendezvous at 5 p.m. and move under the orders of the G.O.C. 6th Cavalry Brigade to a billeting area which will be notified later.

(3) Transport.

1st Echelon.—The Transport of this Echelon (under Major Barry, 1st Life Guards) will rendezvous in the order given on the attached sheet "A" on the right of the YPRES—MENIN road, with the tail clear of 'bus head by 5.30 p.m. to-morrow and will move off from there under instructions which will be issued by a Divisional Staff Officer on the ground.

It must be clearly understood that it is of the utmost importance that carts (including M.G. limbers) should be unloaded immediately on arrival at "dumping ground" in rear of trenches and returned at once to the Market Square, YPRES, by the same road as they came, where they will be marshalled by Major Barry and sent back to their billets.

On arrival at "dumping ground," water carts should be closed up, emptied and returned as quickly as possible independently of the remainder of the transport to the 3rd Field Squadron billets in YPRES, to which unit they will be attached.

2nd Echelon.—The Transport of this Echelon, under the command of the Transport Officer, 6th Cavalry Brigade, will be parked by 5.30 p.m. in the Market Square, YPRES, and will await the orders of the G.O.C. 6th Cavalry Brigade.

4. Water.—All water will be drawn from the Swimming Bath, YPRES, the position of which will be notified later by the A.D.M.S. to the O.C. 3rd Field Squadron. Water carts will move up full every night, return to YPRES and be available for the reserve troops during the day.

5. Inter-Communication. — The O.C. 3rd Signal Squadron will detail 5 motor cyclists to report to Major Fetherstonhaugh at the transport rendezvous on the YPRES—MENIN road, at 6 p.m. to-morrow.

6. Ammunition.—Brigades will inform Divisional Headquarters each day at 10 a.m. the amount of the S.A.A., bombs, etc., which will be required that evening. Nil reports to be furnished.

7. Medical Arrangements.—A Light Horse Ambulance will be held in readiness near the HALTE to-morrow night, and, if required, can be moved up to ZILLEBEKE.

A. HORE RUTHVEN, Brigade Major,
8th Cavalry Brigade.

2/2/15.

"A."

1st ECHELON.

2 limbers, with M.G's.	of 2nd Life Guards.
1 Water Cart	
do.	of Leicester Yeomanry.
do.	of 1st Life Guards.

Digitized by Google

1 Limber, with M.G. } of Essex Yeomanry.
1 Water Cart }
2 Limbers, with M.G's. } of Royal Horse Guards.
1 Water Cart }

(These follow in rear of each regiment from 'bus head).

"A" Echelon in above order. 1 Tool Cart only to be taken. Remainder will stay in billets until further orders.

Supplies in above order.

Extra wagons (which do not form part of "A" Echelon) in above order.

2nd ECHELON.—Transport of 8th Cavalry Brigade (less 4 squadrons). Transport of 6th Cavalry Brigade.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX II.

EXTRACT FROM WAR DIARY OF ESSEX YEOMANRY.

The following extract narrating the work of the 8th Cavalry Brigade Dismounted Party, which included a company of the Essex Yeomanry, under Major G. Gold, in December, 1917, *illustrates the nature of the work accomplished when in the line and the daily routine of officers and men :—*

December 1st.—Party arrived at Bernes at mid-day and were billeted in huts. Heavy shelling north of Epehy during the night.

" 2nd.—" Stand to " at 6 o'clock a.m. Wiring party to Hesbecourt from 7.30 a.m. to dusk. Party endeavoured to work on ridge, but considerably shelled and unable to do so. Heavy shelling north of Epehy during the day.

" 3rd.—No " stand to." Essex and Leicester parties moved to Montigny Farm, X.R.H. remaining at Bernes ; very quiet day.

" 4th.—Essex and X.R.H. parties relieve East Surreys in support line of 72nd Infantry Brigade at Cote and Fervacque trenches. Relief completed by 5 o'clock p.m. Leicester party working at Lic and forming a defensive flank to Templeux-le-Guerard.

" 5th.—Considerable excitement, as it is reported Germans will attack about Turnip Trench and Villeret Lane. Lieut. Wear and 40 men to front line at 5 o'clock a.m. No attack develops. Considerable shelling during the day and aerial activity above normal. Wiring parties to Hargicourt Valley at 9.30 p.m. Two field batteries arrive in support.

" 6th.—" Stand to" 5.30 a.m. Working parties of X.R.H. and E.Y. to wire Villeret Valley at 9 o'clock a.m. Still considerable excitement over threatened attack. Reconnaissance of lines of approach for counter-attack completed and liaison with Queen's and West Kents made. Front line posts heavily shelled all day. Working parties of X.R.H. and E.Y. for night wiring. Queen's and West Kents to raid for an identification. French batteries register during the day.

Digitized by Google

December 7th.—"Stand to" 5 o'clock. No working parties during day. X.R.H. and E.Y. for night wiring in Villeret Valley. Quiet day and very little shelling.

" 8th.—"Stand to" 5 o'clock. Relieved by the 7th North Staffs at 2.30 p.m. 8th Dismounted Party relieve the 1st R.F. at Vadencourt at 5 o'clock p.m. in 17th Infantry Brigade support. 6th and 7th Dismounted Battalions now in line; very quiet; no shelling and little aerial activity.

" 9th.—No "stand to." Baths at Vadencourt. X.R.H., L.Y., E.Y. supply working parties to line. Aerial activity above normal, otherwise situation very quiet on this front.

" 10th.—No "stand to." Bright sunny day and aerial activity above normal. Enemy shell post during morning. Defence scheme of village prepared and E.Y. working party on trenches during the night. Corps Commander visits Battalion H.Q. and enquires into sock shortage. General Seely visits Battalion H.Q.

" 11th.—No "stand to." C.O. reconnoitres A2 Sub-Sector and Le Verguier forts with General Portal. Le Verguier forts to be put into a state of defence. Hard white frost during night and M.G's. very active throughout the night. No visibility and artillery quiet. Working parties of X.R.H., L.Y. and E.Y. at night.

" 12th.—No "stand to." Officer reconnaissance of A2 Sub-Sector. Work on Vadencourt defences by day, as there is no visibility. No working for night. Frost continues and weather severe.

" 13th.—Relieve 7th Dismounted Battalion at Le Verguier. E.Y. left company, X.R.H. right company, L.Y. in support at Le Verguier. Relief completed at 9 o'clock and O.K. Dark night and very quiet. Frost continues.

" 14th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock a.m. Very misty and very little shelling of posts and back areas during the day. E.Y. patrol, under Lieut. Wear and 20 men, to search for suspected T.M. emplacement at 7 o'clock p.m. They found nothing. Lieut. Barnard, one officer and 30 men to patrol No Man's Land and search for some suspected M.G. emplacement and attack working parties. No movement of enemy and nothing found. Battalion H.Q. shelled at 8.30 p.m., probably ration strafe. Frost continues.

Digitized by Google

December 15th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Bright and sunny day and own and enemy's aircraft very active. Le Verguier and Jeancourt shelled during the morning with H.E. Some of our troops considerably shelled. Patrols under Sniping Officer of X.R.H. No movement and nothing found. Enemy heavily shell X.R.H. posts during the night. No damage done, otherwise all quiet on rest of front. Night firing on back areas by our Field Artillery.

,, 16th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Dull morning and threatens snow. Artillery inactive and little shelling of our front. General Vaughan inspects A2 Sub-Sector during the morning. No patrols sent out owing to heavy snowstorm. Considerable shelling of posts during the evening; otherwise quiet.

,, 17th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Very heavy snowstorm during the night and about four inches on ground at 8 a.m. Snowed slightly throughout the morning. No artillery fire on either side and very quiet day. Patrols sent out at night, but no enemy seen. L.Y. relieved E.Y., who went to G.D., Priel Wood and Sunken Lane.

,, 18th.—"Stood to" 6 o'clock. Hard frost during night and snowing early; cleared up mid-day and visibility good. Some shelling of our posts. Aircraft very quiet. Considerable enemy movements all day in front line trenches. No patrols out on account of no white smocks to hand. A practice counter-attack was carried out by L.Y. and E.Y. took up their positions.

,, 19th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Very hard frost and bright sunny morning. Visibility very good and aerial activity above normal. Working parties on Le Verguier defences.

,, 20th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Very foggy morning and no visibility. Everything quiet on Battalion Sector. 2nd Cavalry Division relieve 72nd Infantry Brigade on our left. At 3 a.m. the Germans approached our wire and threw bombs and then retired. No damage done.

,, 21st.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Very foggy morning and quiet day. E.Y. relieve X.R.H. on right company front. Patrol under Lieuts.

Digitized by Google

December 21st.—Barnard and Brown, with two H.A.R's. and 42 O.R's., to search No Man's Land. They are surprised by a superior force of Germans, apparently lying up for them. Patrol compelled to retire rapidly, as they are threatened by another patrol in their rear. Casualties: 5 missing, 3 wounded and 2 H.A.R's. lost in retirement.

,, 22nd.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Bright and sunny morning and snow still very thick on ground. Aircraft busy, but very little shelling. No sign of missing can be seen on No Man's Land. A strong patrol was sent out at 10 o'clock to lie up in Ascension Wood for the Germans. Scouts sent out in advance report the wood held by Germans. Owing to the unfavourable conditions patrol withdrew. Very quiet night.

,, 23rd.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Bright and sunny morning and snow still thick on ground. Aircraft and artillery normal. A strong patrol, under Lieut. Wear, of three officers and 60 men lie up in Ascension Wood all night. No Germans appeared and patrol withdrew. Quiet night. Weather severe.

,, 24th.—"Stand to" 6 o'clock. Dull misty morning and artillery rather more active against our posts. A strong patrol of four officers and 80 O.R's. and two H.A.R's. enter Ascension Wood and lie up for Germans. German patrol of about 40 men approach wood and heavily fired on by L.Y. Two prisoners taken; one died at company H.Q. We suffered no casualties. Identification normal. Quiet night, otherwise weather severe.

,, 25th.—Relieved by 6th Battalion L.Y. and X.R.H. to Vadencourt; E.Y. in support at Le Verguier. Relief completed by 10 o'clock p.m. Very quiet night; weather severe.

,, 26th.—No "stand to." Very quiet day. Some shelling of Le Verguier. Weather still severe. Lieut.-Colonel Whitmore arrives.

,, 27th.—Essex H.Q. take over from Lt.-Col. C. Gibbs and X.R.H. H.Q. Relief O.K. Outgoing Battalion H.Q. to Roisel for night, thence to billets.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX III.

WAR HONOURS.

List of Members of the Essex Yeomanry who received honours or awards for service in the campaign, with year of award :—

1915.

Military Cross, Captain E. A. Ruggles-Brise ; D.C.M., Sergt. W. C. Howard ; Cross of the Order of St. George, 4th Class, Private G. Wear ; mentioned in despatches, Major A. Roddick, Major A. Buxton, Captain E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C., Captain R. A. Thomson, S.S.M. W. C. Howard, Sergeant A. Frost, Sergeant H. R. Wardill, Corporal W. C. V. Schwier and Lance-Corporal F. Smy.

1916.

D.S.O., Major A. Buxton ; D.C.M., Sergeant A. E. Abbott and Lance-Corporal L. G. Cook ; mentioned in despatches, Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, Major A. Buxton, Second Lieutenant T. F. Buxton and R.S.M. C. Farrell.

1917.

D.S.O., Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore and Captain E. Stork (R.A.M.C., T.) ; M.C., Lieut. E. J. Sayer, Lieut. J. C. Chaplin, Second Lieut. A. Winter Rose ; Croix de Guerre (France), Lieut. R. A. Thomson and M. de Logis P. Vernot, interpreter (attached) ; Legion of Honour, Croix de Chevalier, Major G. G. Gold ; D.C.M., S.S.M. W. W. McKellar and Sergeant J. Brown ; Military Medal, Private E. D. Dorrington, Private G. Player, Private A. E. Rolph, Sergeant F. Smy, Sergeant R. D. Turnell, Sergeant E. W. Walker, Private L. G. Howard, Private A. D. Page, Corporal G. E. Rowell, Private W. Roper, Private H. Thorn, Sergeant G. C. Crees, Corporal G. E. Pettitt, Sergeant L. G. Cook, D.C.M., Corporal B. G. Steward, S.S.M. G. S. J. Rex, Private E. H. Finch, Lance-Corporal F. Last, Private W. C. Saville, Lance-Corporal J. N. Bucknell, Private J. Graham, M. de Logis P. Vernot, interpreter (attached) ; Medaille Militaire, R.S.M. C. Farrell ; mentioned in despatches, Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, Major J. O. Parker, Captain E. Stork (R.A.M.C., T.), Lieut. R. D. Holland and S.S.M. E. G. Bidie.

1918.

C.M.G., Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore ; D.S.O., Major E. Hill ; M.C., Captain R. G. Proby, Second Lieut. W. C. V. Schwier ; D.C.M., Sergeant A. Sprake ; Military Medal, Lance-Corporal A. J. Hall, Lance-Sergeant J. T. Lowe, Private A. J. Howard ; bar to Military Medal, Sergeant G. C. Crees ; M.S.M., R.Q.M.S. H. B. Joscelyne, Acting-Sergant G. D. T. Slade, Lance-

Digitized by Google

Corporal H. S. Whitcher ; Croix de Guerre (Belgium), Major J. O. Parker, S.Q.M.S. L. A. Skipper, Corporal H. C. Cordell and Private C. Wood ; mentioned in despatches, Major E. Hill, Lieut. G. Wear, Lieut. C. A. Collis, Sergeant F. H. Jenkins and Private E. W. Bewers.

Officers and Other Ranks who received honours and awards whilst serving away from the Regiment : Military Cross, Captain E. P. W. Wedd, Captain L. M. Woodhouse, Lieut. W. P. Batters, Lieut. L. B. Hore, Lieut. W. A. Tuczek, Second Lieut. A. J. Cockrill, Second Lieut. P. R. Jermyn and Second Lieut. L. Solani ; D.F.C., Captain L. M. Woodhouse, D.C.M., Private C. V. Riggs, Staff-Sergeant B. Chapman; M.M., Sergeant C. A. Curtis, Sergeant O. W. Bugg, Corporal P. J. Green, Private D. G. Perry and Private F. J. Levey ; Croix de Guerre (France), Lieut. D. Morgan and Trumpeter W. Gregory ; Order of the Nile, 4th Class, A/Captain M. Dudding ; M.S.M., A./S.S.M. W. E. Winkley ; mentioned in despatches, Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, Captain E. P. W. Wedd, Lieut. F. C. Meyer, Lieut. S. J. Tufnell and Lieut. (Tem. Major) S. Day.

Officers and Other Ranks, formerly of the Essex Yeomanry, who received honours or awards after being transferred to other units : Victoria Cross, Lance-Corporal H. Mugford, 8th M.G. Squadron. M.C., Lieut. W. P. Connolly, 16th Royal Warwickshire Regiment ; Lieut. W. H. Bateman, 1st Bn. The Essex Regiment ; Lieut. C. B. Prior (Chaplain), 66th Division, R.F.A. ; Second Lieut. C. G. H. Midgley, M.G.C. M.M., Sergeant J. R. Tozer, 8th M.G. Squadron ; Sergeant N. Harrison, 8th M.G. Squadron ; Private D. W. L. Warren, 8th M.G. Squadron ; Sergeant W. H. Bateman, 9th Bn. The Essex Regt. ; Lieut. E. Poole, City of London Yeomanry ; Private M. G. Male, 1st Bn. The Essex Regt. ; Private F. Sutton, Tank Corps ; Private G. Hewett, 4th Bn. The Essex Regt. ; Gnr. P. D. Manning, Tank Corps ; Private F. W. Larrett, 6th Cav. Field Ambulance. Croix de Guerre (Belgium), Sergeant F. W. Cottis, 8th M.G. Squadron ; Private G. Hewett, 4th Bn. The Essex Regt.

Officers who received honours or awards or who were mentioned in despatches for valuable services rendered in connection with the war : C.V.O., Lieut.-Colonel the Hon. A. H. F. Greville ; mentioned in despatches, Brig.-General R. B. Colvin, C.B., Captain R. Edwards, Lieut. (A./Capt.) R. R. Archer and Lieut. F. Gingell.

The following Officers, N.C.O's. and Men were specially mentioned in the Regimental War Diary for their conduct on May 13th, 1915, at the Battle of Frezenberg Ridge :—

Major A. Roddick for the pace and dash with which he led the attack. Captain E. A. Ruggles-Brise, Lieut. R. A. Thompson, Sergeant Howard, Lance-Corporal Wardill and Private Smy for their gallantry in holding an advanced position in some ruined houses until dark, and after they had been cut off. Corporal

Digitized by Google

Frost, Privates Schwier, Johnson and Dean, for stretcher-bearing under heavy fire. Privates Abbott and Wear for bravery and coolness in action. Privates Holland and Bates for useful reconnaissance and coolness in action. The following were also noticed as doing especially good work: Sergeants Hodge, Pritchard, Ledger, Walker, Corporals Bird, Bosworth, Lance-Corporals Turnell, Seabrook, Rex, Privates Cornell, Holton, Manning, Middlecoat, F. Smart, Skinner, A. D. Tompkins and Anning.

List of N.C.O's. and Men whose names were placed on record in the Regimental War Diary for conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty during the Monchy operations, April, 1917 :—

Headquarters, R.S.M. C. Farrell, Sergeant F. H. Jenkins, Corporal R. L. Wheatley, Lance-Corporals A. E. Perry, P. H. Leeks, L. H. Law, W. Stock, Privates C. H. Ridgwell, W. G. Gardiner, H. Thorn, A. D. Page, C. F. Johnson. "A" Squadron, S.S.M. W. W. McKellar, Sergeants G. C. Crees, F. G. Aldous, G. Siddons, R. S. Grant, Corporal C. G. H. Midgley, Lance-Corporal L. Paton, Privates F. Austin, H. Burns, H. C. Cordell, J. Caines, T. H. Curtis, A. J. Claxton, H. Digby, A. W. Hawes, F. Last, H. T. Moss, E. Rampling, C. Self, S. E. Peacock, B. G. Steward, O. T. Sutton, W. Watts, E. Tompkins, C. N. Ridgwell, P. Pryke, R. P. Sandbrook, A. S. Rutland, W. J. Pleasant. "B" Squadron, Sergeants J. Brown, W. Ridgwell, Corporals A. D. Tompkins, G. Pettitt, Lance-Corporals J. N. Bucknell, F. T. Kavanagh, W. W. Bunting, E. Finch, A. Hazell, W. A. King, W. Roper, H. Shrimpton, E. W. Smith, C. E. Wood, D. Wood. "C" Squadron, Sergeants L. G. Cook, G. S. J. Rex, W. H. Pennall, G. Hodge, O. W. Bugg, Corporals G. E. Rowell, J. Barbour, C. J. Bruce, J. A. Cowell, G. C. Foster, Hooper, D. Holl, F. Hobrough, D. Matthams, D. S. Saville and M. J. Whiffen.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX IV.

CASUALTIES.

List of Officers and Men who were killed in action, died of wounds or as the result of service, and were wounded during the war :—

3/12/14	Cpl. Hanin, Interpreter (French) (Killed, accidental).
8/2/15	Pte. W. Roberts, Wickford (Killed).
9/2/15	Pte. A. E. Barrell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Taylor (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Turner (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Richards (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. F. Braddy (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. E. Foster (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. J. French (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. J. W. Salmon (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Hughes (Wounded).
12/2/15	Pte. A. Wright (Wounded).
24/4/15	Motor Cyclist L./Cpl. C. E. Thorn, Tiptree (Died at home).
28/4/15	Pte. W. Morley (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Digby (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. W. King (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. A. D. T. Bowers (Wounded).
11/5/15	Pte. C. E. Green, Chelmsford (Killed).
13/5/15	Major A. Roddick (Killed).
,,	Lieut. G. S. Johnston (Killed).
,,	Lieut. A. G. Swire (Killed).
,,	2/Lieut. G. P. N. Reid (Killed).
,,	Cpl. V. S. Diggens, Loughton (Killed).
,,	Lt.-Col. E. Deacon (Killed).
,,	Major F. H. D. C. Whitmore (Wounded).
,,	Capt. A. R. Steele (Wounded).
,,	Lieut. V. T. G. Hine (Wounded).
,,	Lieut. R. Edwards (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. H. P. Holt (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. C. Finney (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. T. Dunmore (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. H. Jenkyn (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Hallett (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. P. Connolly (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Last (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Austin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Smith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. G. Newcombe (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

13/5/15	Cpl. K. S. Grant (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. H. Pennal (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. Manning (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. W. Goody (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. Baker (Wounded).
,,	Pte. K. Holland (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. Harvey (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Ball (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Blyth (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Smith (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. H. Mann (Wounded).
,,	Pte. N. Leeder (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Cunningham (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. G. Moss (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. W. Fox (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. W. Hutton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. D. Harvey (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Pegrum (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. W. J. Hart (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. J. Adams (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. D. Dorrington (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Butcher (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Joyce (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. B. Pritchard (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. K. Franks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Errington (Wounded).
,,	Pte. R. Hall (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Waller (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. A. Rivers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. C. Woods (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. J. Mills (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. Green (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Cunningham (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. E. Glew (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Brazier (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Hazelton (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. F. Speakman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Richards (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. A. Curtis (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. C. Caines (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Scrivener (Wounded).
,,	Pte. R. Townsend (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. E. Walker (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. F. Chapman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. H. Finch (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. J. Bond (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. Sparrow (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. J. Revell (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

13/5/15	Pte. A. J. Wyatt (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. J. H. Moody (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. R. Williams (Wounded).
,,	Pte. D. W. Steward (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. E. Brice (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. T. Bentley (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. J. Curtis (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. W. Jordan (Wounded).
,,	Pte. O. T. Sutton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Minns (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. J. Dyer (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. S. Brown (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. W. Bewers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. O. Hughes (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. G. J. Wyatt (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. E. Banks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Baynes (Wounded).
,,	Pte. R. Robinson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Lang (Wounded).
,,	Pte. R. Clare (Wounded).
,,	Pte. R. P. Baker (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. J. Bruce (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. H. Sergeant (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. H. Veale (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. W. Whent (Wounded).
,,	S.S.M. H. H. Newman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. E. Thompson (Wounded).
14/5/15	Sgt. T. Clark, Farnham (Killed).
,,	Sgt. J. Draper, Abridge (Killed).
,,	Cpl. F. E. Bird, Bishop's Stortford (Killed).
,,	L./Cpl. A. B. Croxon, Burnham-on-Crouch (Died of Wounds).
,,	Sgt. D. Ledger, Faulkbourne (Killed).
,,	Pte. A. T. South, Waltham Abbey (Killed).
,,	Sgt. A. Pearce, Romford (Killed).
,,	Pte. A. J. Wild, South Woodford (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. Taylor, Tiptree (Killed).
,,	Cpl. T. Allen, Great Horkesley (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. J. Petchey, Maldon (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. Propert, Little Waltham (Killed).
,,	Pte. B. Snell, Earls Colne (Killed).
,,	Pte. O. Askew, Maldon (Killed).
,,	L./Cpl. F. Seabrook, Braintree (Killed).
,,	Sgt. L. C. Deakin, Orsett (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. Bell, Earls Colne (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. E. Gardiner, Upper Yeldon (Killed).
,,	Pte. M. D. Free, Thaxted (Died of Wounds).
,,	Pte. F. J. Deighton, Castle Hedingham (Killed).

Digitized by Google

14/5/15	Pte. C. J. Truefitt, Brixton (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. A. D. McTurk, South Weald (Killed).
,,	Pte. R. Ridgwell, Wethersfield (Killed).
,,	Pte. D. H. Tayler, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. H. Seabrook, Clare (Killed).
,,	Pte. D. W. Christie, London (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. W. Blincoe, Middlesbrough (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. E. Jones, Watford (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. C. Smith, High Roding (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. A. Robins, Leyton (Died of Wounds).
,,	Pte. W. Day, Dedham (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. J. Pharaoh, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Taylor, Quendon (Killed).
,,	Pte. B. Mann, Great Oakley (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. E. Newman, Brentwood (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. J. Prime, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. B. W. Beggin, Farnborough (Killed).
,,	Sgt. C. E. Brock, Rayne (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. Nunn, Horndon-on-the-Hill (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Miller, Epping (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. R. Milbank, Chelmsford (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. E. Mansfield, Forest Gate (Killed).
,,	Pte. L. A. Hill, Weeley (Killed).
,,	Pte. J. Barker, Walton-on-Naze (Killed).
,,	Pte. J. W. Taylor, Tiptree (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. G. Wright, Great Leighs (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. C. Fairhead, Messing (Killed).
,,	Sgt. L. E. Butcher, Cheshunt (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. H. Cattell, Leigh (Killed).
,,	Pte. G. Cottee, Tiptree (Killed).
,,	Cpl. E. Appleton, Boltons, S.W. (Killed).
,,	Pte. B. Hurst, Asheldham (Killed).
,,	Pte. J. J. Taylor, Calne (Killed).
,,	Pte. R. Lagden, Brentwood (Killed).
,,	Sgt. S. Newman, Thorley (Killed).
,,	Pte. R. C. Williams, Harpenden (Killed).
15/5/15	Pte. J. Rust, Wethersfield (Died of Wounds).
,,	Pte. H. R. Rowell, Ashton (Died of Wounds).
20/5/15	Sgt. R. C. Packer, Dovercourt (Died of Wounds).
,,	Pte. W. Beeney, Leicester (Died of Wounds).
23/5/15	Cpl. E. W. Ridgwell, Orsett (Died of Wounds).
27/5/15	Pte. W. F. Rayner, South Woodford (Died of Wounds).
3/6/15	L./Cpl. J. W. Scott (Wounded).
7/6/15	Pte. H. W. Swann, Tiptree (Died of Wounds).
8/6/15	Pte. W. Whitwell (Wounded).
23/6/15	Sgt. G. Smart, Chorlton-cum-Hardy (Died).
25/6/15	Sgt. F. W. L. Sudbury, Halstead (Died at Home).
,,	Cpl. G. C. Deverell, Shepperton (Died of Wounds).

Digitized by Google

5/7/15	Cpl. G. E. Glew, Cheshunt (Died of Wounds).
18/7/15	Pte. D. M. Hulton (Wounded).
21/7/15	Pte. J. Smith (Wounded).
6/9/15	Sgt. P. Hoare, London (Died of Wounds).
27/9/15	Pte. H. G. Squirrell, Marylebone (Killed).
,,	Capt. E. A. Ruggles-Brise, M.C. (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. J. K. Swire (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. E. T. L. Pelly (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. J. Adams (Wounded).
,,	A. Waterman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. E. Gardiner (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Field (Wounded).
4/10/15	Lieut. C. C. Tower (Killed).
9/1/16	Pte. W. J. Bradford (Wounded, accidental).
13/1/16	Pte. J. Stockwell (Wounded, accidental).
14/1/16	Pte. F. J. Pennall (Wounded).
15/1/16	Pte. J. A. Eade, Westminster (Died of Wounds).
,,	Pte. H. Jowers, Little Clacton (Died of Wounds).
21/1/16	Pte. S. Wren (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. W. Fisher (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Gosling (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. H. Gosling (Wounded).
22/1/16	Pte. L. G. Howard (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. T. Parker (Wounded).
26/1/16	Pte. W. T. Riddle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. B. Bacon (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. L. G. Cook (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Law (Wounded).
2/2/16	Pte. A. E. Rolph (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Piggott (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. C. Chapman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Grundy (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. C. Daniel (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. H. Passiful, Colchester (Died of Wounds).
3/2/16	Pte. T. H. Moorse (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. R. Woollings (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. A. Capon, Ipswich (Killed).
4/2/16	Pte. J. A. McLoughlin (Wounded).
5/2/16	Pte. F. G. Gibson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Rooks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. Cudmore (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. R. Gosling (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. S. Woods (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. E. Vaines (Wounded).
16/2/16	Pte. G. Etherden (Wounded).
21/6/16	Pte. J. E. Banks, Stanford-le-Hope (Died of Wounds).
9/7/16	Captain J. C. Chaplin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. R. Bright (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

9/7/16	Pte. S. V. Pearce (Wounded).
30/7/16	Pte. B. Willis (Wounded).
31/7/16	Pte. G. Catton, Bow (Killed).
,,	Pte. R. J. Bell (Wounded.)
,,	Pte. A. W. Hawes (Wounded).
21/8/16	Pte. R. Jerrard, Lewisham (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. A. Lord, Great Bentley (Killed).
7/9/16	Pte. J. A. Gillam, Battersea Rise (Died at Home).
16/9/16	Pte. J. W. Argent (Wounded).
18/9/16	Pte. C. H. Corderoy, Camberwell (Died of Wounds).
5/10/16	Pte. E. Y. Westcott (Wounded).
9/10/16	Pte. W. Law (Wounded).
17/11/16	L./Cpl. G. Perry, Dunmow (Died).
3/12/16	Lieut. and Q.M. E. J. Sayer (Wounded).
25/3/17	Pte. H. E. Hughes, Liverpool (Died of Wounds).
11/4/17	2/Lieut. J. F. Lingeman (Died of Wounds).
,,	Sgt. R. S. Grant, Castle Hedingham (Killed).
,,	Cpl. W. C. Bareham, Clacton (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Digby, Great Holland (Killed).
,,	Pte. J. Smith, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. Smith, Langham (Killed).
,,	Pte. T. A. Wright, Great Bentley (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. Young, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. T. E. Charlesworth, Fulham (Killed).
,,	S.S.M. W. C. Howard, Danbury (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Bright, Braintree (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. E. Bunting, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. E. Rollinson, Woodbridge (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. F. Gosling, Southend (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. E. Guiver, Southend (Killed).
,,	S./S.S. Thomson, Stradishall (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. C. Hobrough, Parsons Heath (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. A. Holland, Newport, Essex (Killed).
,,	Tptr. A. T. Tibbenham, Bungay (Killed).
,,	Tptr. A. H. W. Stowell, Bulphan (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. Steward, Wivenhoe (Killed).
,,	Pte. D. T. Matthams, Aythorp Roding (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. W. Steward, West Thurrock (Killed).
,,	Pte. B. Smith, Weeley (Killed).
,,	Sgt. A. E. Smith, Terling (Killed).
,,	L./Cpl. F. E. Warren, Braintree (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. W. Bayman, Coalville (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. H. Baines, Castle Hedingham (Killed).
,,	Pte. G. Bassett, Saffron Walden (Killed).
,,	Sgt. E. May, Buntingford (Killed).
,,	Lt.-Col. F. H. D. C. Whitmore, D.S.O. (Wounded).
,,	Major A. Buxton, D.S.O. (Wounded).
,,	Major G. G. Gold (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

11/4/17	Major E. Hill (Wounded).
,,	Captain C. N. Gilbey (Wounded).
,,	Lieut. J. K. Swire (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. S. White (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. A. Winter Rose (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. R. C. Weatherby (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. G. Wear (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. W. Ritchie (Wounded).
,,	R.S.M. C. Farrell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. B. J. Stone (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. C. D. Packard (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Thorn (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. C. J. Midgley (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. H. Waller (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. F. Brunwin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. S. Cardy (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. Chopping (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. Waspe (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. G. Siddons (Wounded).
,,	S./S. N. C. Deacon (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Appleby (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Partridge (Wounded).
,,	S.S.M. W. W. McKellar (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. E. Gladwell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Etherden (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. W. Hume (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. W. C. Chappell (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. H. Bennett (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. J. Brown (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. E. T. Wakefield (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. S. Woods (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Andrews (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. E. Benson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. C. Carter (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Davis (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. J. Goodwin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. J. Hatley (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. D. Harvey (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Hodge (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. J. Jackaman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Jopson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. H. Moorse (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. T. Peckam (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. G. Riddle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. Searles (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Travers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. W. Wilson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. D. Wood (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

11/4/17	Pte. H. Warren (Wounded).
,,	S.S.M. A. S. Tyler (Wounded).
,,	Pte. M. Goodinson (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. O. W. Bugg (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. G. S. Hodge (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. G. W. Payne (Wounded).
,,	F./Sgt. T. Meredith (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. S.S. W. S. Woodford (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. G. E. Rowell (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. C. Rowell (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. P. J. Green (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. J. Adams (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. A. Auger (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. H. Barrett (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Bradford (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. J. Britton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. O. J. Caton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. H. Crees (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. D. Deeks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. M. G. Dellow (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. Millard (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. J. C. Page (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. Rogers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. J. Rivers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Searle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. W. Covill (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. C. Smith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Webb (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. C. Stock (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Radford (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. J. Martin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. C. Sutton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. K. Warren (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Wright (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Barker (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. R. Taylor (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. J. Bamber (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. W. French (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. G. Tolhurst (Wounded).
,,	Sgt./Tptr. G. Osborne (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. E. Peacock (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Baker (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. W. Cullum (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. D. Harvey (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. C. Corrall (Wounded).
,,	Pte. N. B. Daniels (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. W. Deeks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Gregory (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

11/4/17	Pte. A. E. Cracknell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. G. Burch (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Tompkins (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. T. Gooch (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Knight (Wounded).
14/4/17	S./S. Corpl. H. R. C. Gouldstone, Finchingfield (Died at Home).
,,	Pte. G. Sergant, Clacton (Died at Home).
15/4/17	Pte. H. Travers, Gloucester (Killed).
4/6/17	Pte. J. F. Ashwin (Wounded).
27/6/17	L./Cpl. J. Robertson (Wounded).
2/7/17	Sgt. W. Redgwell, Tolleshunt Darcy (Died of Wounds).
2/9/17	Major J. O. Parker (Wounded).
24/10/17	Pte. A. Newton, Mansfield Woodhouse (Killed).
18/11/17	Sgt. W. H. Pennal, Forest Gate (Died).
1/12/17	Capt. M. Dudding (Wounded).
22/12/17	Pte. F. M. Pilgrim, Notley (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. Humphrey, Milton, Cambs. (Killed).
,,	Pte. K. Putland (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Charters (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. C. Martin (Missing, Prisoner of War).
6/1/18	Pte. C. R. Keene (Wounded).
26/2/18	L./Cpl. A. H. Stevens (Wounded).
21/3/18	Lieut. F. C. Meyer (Wounded).
30/3/18	Pte. J. G. Pyle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. E. Wright (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Savill (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. R. Gosling (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Wise (Wounded).
1/4/18	Pte. G. W. Bradley, Great Waltham (Killed).
,,	Pte. G. Searle (Missing, believed Killed).
,,	2/Lieut. C. A. Collis (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. F. R. Austin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. M. Palmer (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. C. Foster (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. Douce (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. J. Cook (Wounded).
2/4/18	Pte. W. C. Kipping (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Carpenter (Wounded).
22/4/18	Pte. M. A. D. Moss, attached 2nd Dragoon Guards, Southend (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. H. Barrett (Wounded).
4/4/18	Pte. A. H. Barber (Wounded).
6/4/18	Lieut. R. D. Holland (Wounded).
9/4/18	L./Sgt. J. Barbour (Wounded).
28/4/18	Lieut. D. Morgan (Wounded and Missing, Prisoner of War).
,,	Pte. E. A. Gill (Wounded and Missing, Prisoner of War).

Digitized by Google

16/6/18	Pte. A. C. Corrall (Wounded).
22/6/18	Pte. W. T. Jeeves, Girtford (Died of Wounds).
8/8/18	S./S. C. Chapman (Missing, Prisoner of War).
,,	Pte. J. R. Beeson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. B. Ward (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. E. Peacock (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. G. S. Channings (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. L. W. Barker (Wounded).
,,	S./S. A. Mattocks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. H. Goldsmith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Cloughton (Wounded).
,,	S./S. W. Lester (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Speller (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. Lees (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. F. Atkins (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. J. Hall (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. Harden (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. L. W. Hammond (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Jopson (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. Peckham (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. W. Plowright (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Armour (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Giddings (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. W. Nicholls (Wounded).
9/8/18	Sgt. J. Bruce (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. A. Anderson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Gaymer (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. E. Savill (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. S. Blackwell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. M. C. Savage (Wounded).
10/8/18	Sgt. H. E. Bolleter (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. Tompkins, Southend (Killed).
,,	Tptr. W. Gregory (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. A. Whitten (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Andrews (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Scott-Bartie (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. Mascall (Wounded).
14/8/18	Pte. P. Burton (Wounded).
21/8/18	Pte. P. Pryke (Wounded).
24/8/18	Pte. F. G. Happs (Wounded).
3/9/18	Pte. H. S. Hawkins (Wounded).
28/9/18	Pte. W. J. Revell (Died of Pneumonia).
8/10/18	L./Cpl. E. Smith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. V. J. Goldsmith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Mann (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. W. Hawes (Wounded).
9/10/18	Lieut. S. J. Tufnell (Wounded).
,,	Lieut. W. Ritchie (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

10/10/18	Sgt. E. V. Freeman, Great Yarmouth (Died at Home).
,,	Pte. P. W. Thurston, London, E. (Died at Sea).
12/10/18	Pte. W. Appleby (Wounded).
25/10/18	Pte. W. Kennedy, Bakewell (Died of Pneumonia).
28/10/18	Pte. F. Bradbury (Died of Pneumonia).
29/10/18	Capt. A. Winter Rose, M.C. (Died of Influenza).
31/10/18	Pte. H. F. Gilliatt (Died of Pneumonia).
21/11/18	Pte. S. M. Pratt (Died of Pneumonia).
28/11/18	L./Cpl. L. W. Henley (Died of Pneumonia).
7/12/18	Pte. C. Harris (Died of Pneumonia).
27/12/18	Pte. G. C. Gardiner (Died of Pneumonia).
14/2/19	Pte. A. N. Whyman (Died of Pneumonia).
20/2/19	Pte. A. Macdonald (Died of Pneumonia).

Officers and Other Ranks of the Essex Yeomanry who were killed in action or died whilst serving with, or after being transferred to, other units.

29/5/15	Pte. C. Abbott, 1st Australian Field Ambulance (Killed at Anzac Cove).
6/8/15	Pte. J. Flux, 10th Australian Light Horse (Killed in Gallipoli).
24/12/15	Lieut. M. Head, Royal Flying Corps (Killed).
10/7/16	Pte. W. P. A. Pound, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
29/7/16	Capt. H. R. Robertson, 2/1st Essex Yeomanry (Died).
15/9/16	Sgt. A. J. Baynes, Civil Service Rifles (Killed).
20/9/16	L/Cpl. H. M. Chaplin, 2nd Bn. Norfolk Regiment (Died of Dysentery in Mesopotamia).
17/10/16	Cpl. L. W. Plane, R.F.A. (Killed).
	Pte. E. Clarke (Killed).
27/3/17	Pte. A. E. W. Steel, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
30/3/17	Lieut. P. T. Wilson-Yirrell, South Midland Brigade, R.F.A. (Killed).
9/4/17	Pte. Sulyman, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/4/17	Pte. Cressey, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/4/17	Pte. Anderson, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
11/4/17	L./Cpl. G. J. Jones, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
11/4/17	Pte. W. Brown (Killed).
11/4/17	Pte. J. H. Arrol, 8th M.G. Sqdn. (Killed).
11/4/17	Pte. W. H. Metcalf, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
11/4/17	Pte. G. C. Foster, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
14/4/17	Pte. A. Harrington, 1st Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
19/4/17	Pte. Wagstaff, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
22/4/17	Pte. F. C. Carter, 11th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
29/4/17	Pte. G. F. C. Chaplin, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).

Digitized by Google

30/4/17	Pte. J. Winter, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
/5/17	Pte. F. H. G. Carpenter, Canadian Infantry (Killed).
9/5/17	Pte. A. Parmenter (Prisoner of War, Died at Darmstadt).
10/5/17	Pte. W. Pooley, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
11/5/17	Pte. L. C. Cooper, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
17/5/17	2/Lieut. F. C. Osburn, The Essex Regiment (Killed).
18/5/17	Pte. F. Sewell, 4th Dragoon Guards (Died in Hospital at Aldershot).
16/6/17	Lieut. D. R. C. Lloyd, R.A.F. (Killed).
17/7/17	Pte. F. L. Saville, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
17/7/17	Pte. F. Lavender, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
3/8/17	Pte. S. J. Revett, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/10/17	Capt. J. W. Egerton-Green, 1st Bn. Rifle Brigade (Died of Wounds).
19/10/17	Pte. C. H. Perry (Killed).
21/11/17	Pte. A. Saltmarsh, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
30/11/17	L./Cpl. W. F. Holyfield, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
4/1/18	Lieut. P. D. Parker, R.A.F. (Killed).
10/1/18	Pte. R. Joslin, 1/4th Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
21/3/18	Pte. H. Larke, 2/8th Lancashire Fusiliers (Killed).
21/3/18	Lieut. F. S. Osborne, 2/5th Lincolnshire Regiment (Killed).
21/3/18	Pte. H. C. Barrett, 11th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
22/3/18	Pte. W. Schooling, M.G.C. Cavalry (Killed).
27/3/18	Sgt. R. D. Turnell (Killed).
30/3/18	Lieut. H. W. Mann, 178th Brigade, R.F.A. (Killed).
1/4/18	Sgt. Sparrow, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
4/4/18	Pte. A. J. Savage, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/4/18	Pte. H. W. Phillips, 2nd Canadian M.R. Battalion (Killed).
12/4/18	2/Lieut. T. H. Christy, 10th Bn. The Essex Regiment. (Killed).
24/4/18	Lieut. K. C. Herron, 82nd Sqdn. R.A.F. (Killed).
26/4/18	Pte. A. Medhurst, 1/4 K.O.R. Lancaster Regiment (Killed).
26/4/18	Pte. C. H. French, King's Own Royal Lancaster Regiment (Killed).
29/4/18	Pte. W. J. Walker, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
/5/18	Pte. F. J. Davie (Died in France).
11/5/18	Pte. J. Pooley, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).

Digitized by Google

19/5/18	Pte. J. Fuller, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
2/6/18	Pte. G. Hewett, M.M., 4th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Died of Wounds).
14/6/18	Pte. E. R. Banks, King's Own Royal Lancaster Regiment (Died of Wounds).
5/7/18	Sgt. F. H. Tyler, Australian Infantry (Killed).
13/7/18	Capt. E. P. W. Wedd, R.A.M.C. (Killed).
2/8/18	Lieut. Sneddon, R.A.F. (Killed in Egypt).
8/8/18	Pte. H. E. C. Usher (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Boyden (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. A. Willingale, 7th City of London Regiment (Killed).
15/8/18	Pte. O. S. Poll, 11th Suffolks (Killed).
23/8/18	Pte. Thorn (Killed).
26/8/18	Pte. Smith, 7th London Regiment (Died of Wounds).
2/9/18	Pte. A. Bunce, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
2/9/18	Pte. W. A. Garner, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
5/9/18	Pte. F. J. Barkas, The Essex Regiment (Killed).
8/9/18	Pte. F. C. Sutton, M.M., Tank Corps (Died of Wounds).
8/9/18	Pte. E. H. Moles, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
14/9/18	Pte. F. G. Canler, 10th Royal Fusiliers (Killed).
21/9/18	Pte. E. R. Gater, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
23/9/18	Pte. A. Fayres, 11th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
23/9/18	Pte. G. Denton, K.O.R. Lancaster Regiment (Died of Wounds).
27/9/18	Capt. L. M. Woodhouse, 59th Sqdn. R.A.F. (Killed).
27/9/18	Pte. S. Francis, 1st Bn. Royal West Kent Regiment (Killed).
2/10/18	Cpl. G. E. Rowell, 15th Bn. Hampshire Regiment (Killed).
2/10/18	Pte. Cook (Killed).
6/10/18	Pte. W. S. Whur, Machine Gun Corps Cavalry (Killed).
7/10/18	Pte. W. Godfrey (Killed).
8/10/18	Lieut. Burford, The Essex Regiment (Died of Wounds).
8/10/18	Pte. A. G. A. Day, 1st Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
23/10/18	Pte. L. W. Tydeman, 2nd Lincolnshire Regiment, Lewis Gun Section (Killed).
24/10/18	L./Cpl. W. Blaker, 11th Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
24/10/18	L./Cpl. T. E. Hardy, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
24/10/18	Pte. E. Meaby, 11th Bn. Cambridgeshire Regiment (Killed).
27/10/18	Pte. H. R. Linsell, Labour Corps (Died).
27/10/18	Pte. C. Bones, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
27/10/18	Pte. F. Stoper, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).

Digitized by Google

27/10/18 Pte. H. Knowles, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Died of Wounds).
27/10/18 Pte. G. Holmes, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
27/10/18 Pte. Morris, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
31/10/18 Pte. L. L. Little, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Died of Wounds).
31/10/18 Lieut. T. N. Browett, 3/5th The Essex Regiment, transferred King's African Rifles (Died of Influenza at Dar-es-Salaam).
Pte. Elliott (Died of Wounds in France).
Pte. J. A. McLoughing (Wounded, believed Killed).
/11/18 Lieut. A. Smoothy, London Regiment (Died of Wounds).
/11/18 Pte. H. L. Tate (Died in France).
4/11/18 Pte. R. B. Appleby, 10th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
27/11/18 Pte. L. H. Jenkyn (Died of Influenza at Rouen).
Pte. F. C. Miller (Died).
Pte. B. Miller (Died).
Pte. A. Andrews (Died).
2/12/18 Lieut. T. S. Driver, 4th Reserve Regiment Dragoons (Died of Influenza).
28/2/19 Pte. S. E. Newson (Died of Pneumonia).

Casualties sustained by Officers and Other Ranks whilst serving with the Essex Yeomanry: Killed, officers, 8; other ranks, 131—139. Wounded, 28 and 296—324. Prisoners of War—officer, 1 (wounded); 3 (one wounded)—4. Total, 467.

Officers and Other Ranks who were killed whilst serving with other units: Officers, 18; other ranks, 92.

Grand Total: 577.

Also:—

O. Hughes.
L. B. Fitch.
C. W. Barker.
T. Row (or Rous).
E. V. Snowden.

A memorial to the members of the Essex Yeomanry who fell in action or died from disease was erected in Chelmsford Cathedral. The tablet was unveiled by Major-General Sir Henry Hodgson, K.C.M.G., C.B., C.V.O., on Sunday, July 2nd, 1922, and dedicated by the late Bishop of Chelmsford (Dr. Watts Ditchfield).

The Essex Yeomanry also subscribed £150—the largest amount received from any Yeomanry regiment—towards the erection of the Cavalry Memorial in London, which was unveiled by F.M. Earl French, of Ypres, K.P., G.C.B., O.M., on May 21st, 1924.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX V.

EXTRACTS FROM ORDER BOOK OF THE 3rd REGIMENT, ESSEX LOCAL MILITIA.

(Copied from the Adjutant's Order Book by J. Hailes, Sergeant and Adjutant's Clerk).

This ms. notebook is in the possession of Southend Public Library and is published by the courtesy of the Committee and of the Librarian (Mr. W. Pollitt, F.L.A.).

May 30th, 1809.—The Regiment will get their arms and clothing complete as speedily as possible. The dress of the men for the first and second morning drills will be white jackets, trousers and gaiters, with forage caps, and all parades and drills with arms. The evening parade will be in their proper dress clothing. The officers are particularly cautioned to be correct in their own dress, as ordered yesterday. They are also cautioned against wearing round hats in the streets with their regimentals, which irregularity has been observed by the Commandant. He trusts for the future that an attention to a propriety of dress will be universally observed by every officer in the Regiment when off duty as well as on parade. The officers are also reminded that they are expected to attend all drills as well as parades, unless they have leave to the contrary, and the Commandant most particularly desires that they will be punctual as to time and be ready to fall in with their Company exactly at the time ordered: Morning drills—Private parade, half-past five; officers fall in at 6. Morning parade, half-past nine; officers fall in at 10. Evening parade—half-past five; officers fall in at 6. The time to be taken by the Exchange clock. (During the embodiment six companies moved into the Barracks and the remainder, four companies, who had been billeted in Lexden and the outskirts of Colchester, were transferred to the billets thus vacated).

June 17th, 1809.—The Commandant has the pleasure of communicating to the Regiment Colonel Wynch's entire approbation of the review of this morning, who expressed himself in the most handsome terms highly satisfied with the improvement both officers and men have made in the very short period they have been embodied. The Commandant also begs leave to add his acknowledgments to the officers for their attention and to express his satisfaction at the steady conduct of the men.

June 19th, 1809.—Lieut.-Colonel Bawtree begs leave to offer to Lieut.-Colonel Round and to Major Welford his very sincere thanks for the great assistance he has received from their unwearied exertions during a month of unceasing and arduous duty in the formation of the 3rd Regiment of Essex

Digitized by Google

Local Militia and to whose most attentive and unremitted diligence is to be attributed the commendable progress which the Regiment has made in military knowledge. To the captains and subalterns he also requests to make his very sincere acknowledgments for the attention paid to their respective duties and for the careful regard they have shown to the comfort as well as the regular conduct of those immediately under their command. To the staff officers the Commandant feels much indebted for the extraordinary exertions which they have each been called upon to make and which have been so beneficially employed in the service of the Regiment. The Commandant requests that the commanding officers of companies will make known to the non-commissioned officers and men on their dismissal to-morrow the high sense of their good and soldierlike conduct evinced in their sobriety, their ready obedience to the commands of their superiors and their general quiet and peaceful behaviour.

June 21st, 1809.—The permanent sergeants, corporals and drummers are ordered to parade every Monday, Wednesday and Friday, at six o'clock, in the Castle Bailey for drill, until further orders, to commence Monday next. Ordered also that the permanent sergeants, corporals and drummers attend divine service every Sunday morning and parade for that purpose in the Castle Bailey. Every man belonging to the Regiment upon permanent pay is placed under the command of the Adjutant and will obey his orders accordingly.

October 6th, 1809.—The permanent sergeants, corporals and drummers are ordered to attend a church parade in the Castle Bailey, on the 25th day of this month of October, at 10 o'clock in the forenoon, being the day on which His Majesty enters the 50th year of his reign, and to be observed as a day of public thanksgiving and rejoicing.

May 15th, 1810.—The Regiment will parade every morning at half-past nine in the Ordnance Field, and the private parades will be formed precisely at nine, at which one subaltern officer is ordered to attend. No private parades will be allowed in the streets. Three companies may be permitted to parade in the Castle Bailey and three on St. John's Green, and the remainder in the Ordnance Field.

May 15th, 1810.—The credit of the Regiment will be cried down and the sergeants of companies are particularly ordered to caution the landlords of the different public houses against trusting the men that are billeted upon them, as well as any others belonging to the Regiment, and likewise to caution the tradesmen with whom they deal against giving credit, as the Commandant will not be answerable for any debts the men may contract.

May 17th, 1810.—The Commandant considers that it would be more convenient that the private parades should all be held

Digitized by Google

in the Barrack Field and he orders them all to be held there accordingly. The Commandant was sorry to observe very great noise and irregularity in the men this morning on their return from duty to their quarters in the town, and he cautions them against future disorderly conduct and desires that any officer or non-commissioned officer will immediately confine any men they may see so offending. It is particularly ordered that no man be seen in the streets otherwise than regimentally dressed.

May 27th, 1810.—The Regiment will parade to-morrow morning at half-past eight precisely, private parade at 8. The left wing will be supplied with six rounds of ball cartridge per man and will march to Fingringhoe Marshes for practice.

May 28th, 1810.—It being intended to consecrate the colours to-morrow, the parade is ordered at 10 o'clock, private parade at half-past nine. The Regiment, both officers and men, are desired to be in full-dress—white pantaloons, gorget, etc. The men are particularly cautioned to be clean and neatly dressed. Their arms to be flinted and three rounds of blank cartridge issued to each man.

May 31st, 1810.—The Regiment will be reviewed to-morrow at Lexden Heath, by Major-General Moncrieff. The officers will be dressed in white pantaloons, gorgets, etc. The men in review order, full dress, clean shaved, with clean linen, etc., arms flinted and furnished with nine rounds of blank cartridge per man for 40 file per company. Recruits to have no ammunition. Ordered that every man attends who is able, no leave to be given to anyone, and as few a number of cooks allowed as possible. Private parades at 8 o'clock and the parade to be formed and ready to march from the ground by half-past 8 o'clock.

June 1st, 1810.—The General having expressed his entire approbation of the appearance and discipline of the Regiment at the review of this morning, the Commandant has only to offer his congratulations on the occasion and to return his best thanks to the officers, as also to the men, for their attention to the duty of the day.

June 3rd, 1810.—The Regiment will parade to-morrow at half-past nine precisely, private parades at quarter-past eight. To be furnished with three rounds of blank cartridge per man of 40 file per company. The recruits to be left in the Ordnance Field and drilled by the sergeants. The Regiment will march to Lexden Heath and join the regiments from the garrison to fire in honour of the King's birthday. Officers in full dress and the men are desired to be particularly clean and regimentally dressed. (The parade included Royal Horse Artillery, one squadron, 5th Dragoon Guards, one Light Brigade, Royal Artillery, 4th, 43rd, 20th Regiments and 3rd Essex Local Militia, one squadron 5th Dragoon Guards. A Heavy Brigade of Royal Artillery was placed on the right of the line to fire a royal salute).

Digitized by Google

June 3rd, 1810.—The Commandant cautions the men against any irregularity or improper behaviour either in the streets or in their quarters of the evening and night of 4th June, as any disorderly conduct will most certainly be severely punished, but he flatters himself that as their behaviour hitherto has been so satisfactory to him and creditable to themselves, he shall have the happiness of dismissing them with his unqualified thanks for their good conduct to the last hour of their being assembled. (On June 5th the Commandant again expressed, as the year before, his thanks to all ranks).

May 28th, 1811.—The Regiment will parade to-morrow with their colours in review order precisely at 8 o'clock and march to Lexden Heath for inspection, private parades half-past 7 o'clock. The men to be clean shaved and dressed in regimentals, arms flinted and provided with ten rounds of blank cartridge per man for the front and centre ranks, the rear ranks to have no ammunition. The recruits will also march to Lexden, their arms to be flinted for inspection, to have no ammunition. Every man to attend that can possibly march, the guard only excepted, leaving as few cooks as possible.

May 29th, 1811.—The Commandant has the satisfaction of informing the officers, non-commissioned officers and privates of the Regiment that Major-General Sir John Sherbrooke was pleased to express himself satisfied with the inspection of this morning, particularly so under the unfavourable circumstances of bad weather, and to add that he should make a favourable report of the Regiment.

May 31st, 1811.—The Commandant acknowledges with pleasure the regular conduct and good order and discipline of the non-commissioned officers and men generally, and regrets that there should be any exceptions to his unqualified approbation of every individual's conduct, but he is aware, in so large an assemblage, there will be men who are led astray by their ignorance of what is right and the want of a due consideration of the necessity of military discipline and subordination, and he is confident that this regret is no less felt by all the regular and well-disposed in the Regiment than it is by himself. With sentiments of goodwill to all, the Commandant wishes them well until the next period of exercise.

May 19th, 1812.—The permanent non-commissioned officers are ordered to attend early in the High Street and collect together their respective companies and deliver to them their arms, clothing and accoutrements, desiring their men to get their hair cut close and appear at the evening private parade in the Ordnance Field clean dressed, with their arms clean and in good order, cautioning them to have their clothing aired before they put it on. . . . . Such men of the Regiment who are now present and who have been enrolled on or before 1st May, 1809, will be entitled to an allowance of 7s. each for their clothing, provided it is good

Digitized by Google

and serviceable, and also of 5s. 4d. for their necessaries, if complete, or they will be entitled to take away their clothing and necessaries when their four years of service is expired, but it must this year be returned into store, to be ready in case the Regiment may be again called out, when every man will be liable to serve until his four years is fully complete and ended.

May 20th, 1812.—It is ordered that in future all the companies are always formed three deep, except they are particularly ordered to the contrary, and that this is to be understood as the general formation of the company when in battalion, and the commanding officers of companies are desired to select and size their men accordingly.

May 22nd, 1812.—Such men as are willing to extend their services for another four years and whose present period of service expires in the ensuing year and who are not more than 30 years of age, nor have more than two children under 14 years of age, are desired to signify their consent to the officer commanding their companies, who will be furnished with a paper for the men's signature. Each man whose further service is accepted will be entitled to a bounty of two guineas, to be paid upon his enrolment before the Deputy Lieutenants and Justices at their Sub-Division Meeting. (Men enrolled previous to April 20th, 1812, were entitled to two years' exemption from liability to service in the Regular Militia and those after that date to one year's exemption).

May 30th, 1812.—The commanding officers of companies are desired to warn their men against a practice of what they are pleased to call ploughing, which is, running the butt of their musquet along the Ordnance Field when assembled for their private parades, by which many of the butts are injured and several of the pieces must be new stocked, which the Armourer has orders to get done and charge to the officers commanding companies, who are directed to stop the expense from the pay and allowances due to the men whose arms are thus injured.

June 1st, 1812.—The Commandant has the pleasure of communicating to the officers and men of the Regiment, by desire of Major-General Robertson, that the inspection of this morning under very unfavourable circumstances of extreme bad weather has exceeded the General's expectation and that he was fully satisfied with the appearance and steady discipline of the Regiment. (The inspection was at Lexden Heath).

June 2nd, 1812.—The officers were congratulated that the 3rd Essex Local Militia had attained "a state of efficiency as nearly perfect as the nature of the service and the limited time of the different periods of training will permit," whilst the men were dismissed with the Commandant's "entire approbation of their good conduct."

May 26th, 1813.—Commanding officers are desired to enquire if any men in their respective companies are now serving whose

Digitized by Google

four years of service expires before the termination of the present training period, and if there are such men they must be immediately discharged and they are desired particularly to take notice that neither pay nor necessaries can be drawn for any such men.

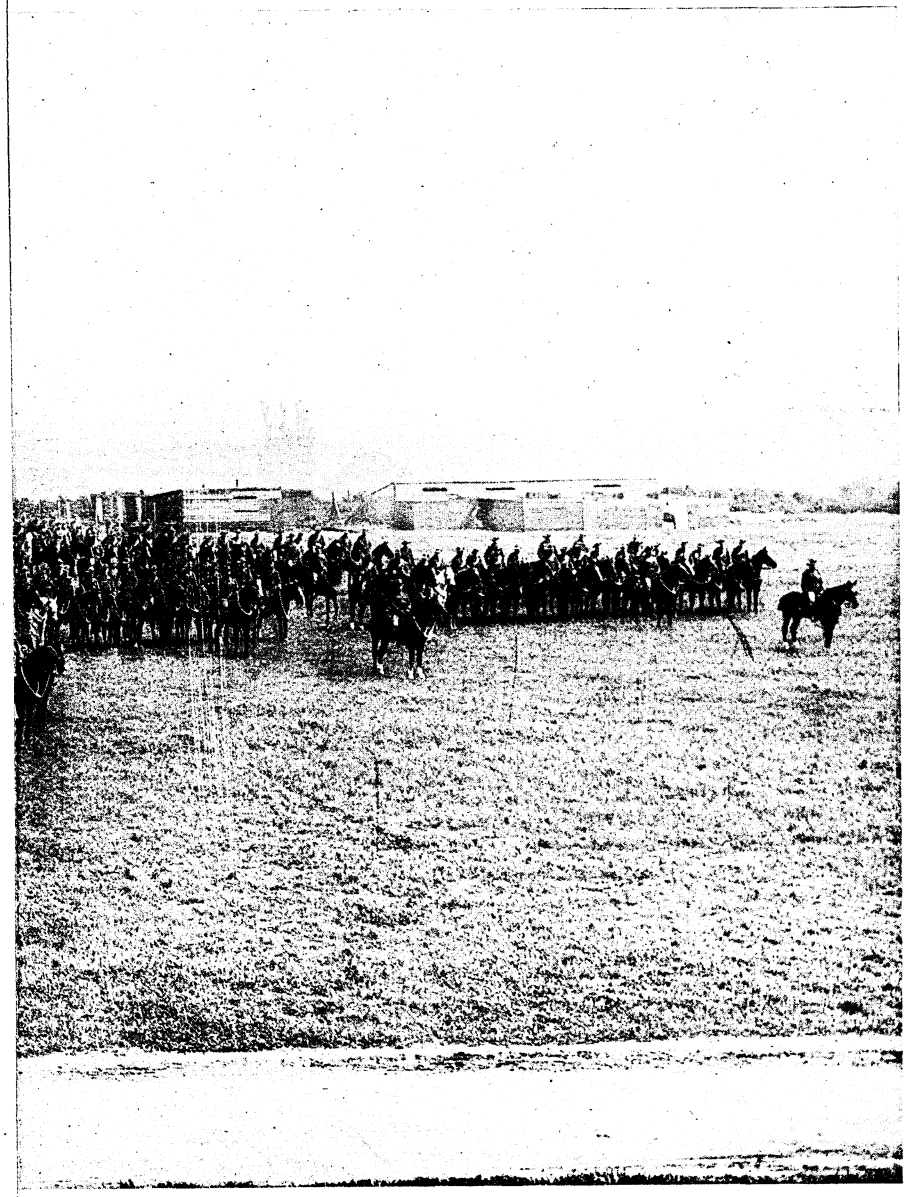
June 1st, 1813.—The Commandant has the satisfaction of communicating to the officers, non-commissioned officers and privates under his command the entire approbation of Major-General Robertson at the inspection of the Regiment, and as the District Orders given this day contain a most creditable testimony of the progress made by the Regiment, the Commandant cannot deny himself the high gratification of conveying those orders to every one in the Regiment, trusting that the applause thus gained by their exertions and attention to their duty will act as an incitement to a still greater attainment of military discipline. Extract from District Order, June 1st: Major-General Robertson was yesterday extremely gratified by the appearance of the 3rd Essex Local Militia Regiment commanded by Colonel Bawtree. The men of this corps, almost entirely formed of new recruits, showed a surprising progress by an exactness of march and formation in the most essential movements which the Major-General could not have expected that this or any new raised corps could have attained in so short a period of time. To the attention of their commanding and other officers, the good dispositions of the men themselves and the excellent system of drill introduced by the non-commissioned officers of the King's Own Stafford Regiment of Militia, a well-merited praise on this occasion is justly due.

June 2nd, 1813.—The Commandant referred to Major-General Robertson's order and stated that "his greatest pleasure is derived from the consideration that he has the high honour of being placed at the head of those whose services have called forth such distinguished notice and applause." He also acknowledged the good conduct of all other ranks.

November 1st, 1813.—Notice of imprisonment of a private for not attending the last annual training—the first case that had occurred in the Regiment.

The last order was dated June 21st, 1814, detailing the personnel of the permanent staff, which consisted of the Adjutant, Captain Smith; Quartermaster, Richard Tuck; Surgeon, H. Perkins; Sergeant-Major, J. Calver, with five sergeants, five corporals, drum major, James Dennis, and eight drummers.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

9/7/16	Pte. S. V. Pearce (Wounded).
30/7/16	Pte. B. Willis (Wounded).
31/7/16	Pte. G. Catton, Bow (Killed).
,,	Pte. R. J. Bell (Wounded.)
,,	Pte. A. W. Hawes (Wounded).
21/8/16	Pte. R. Jerrard, Lewisham (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. A. Lord, Great Bentley (Killed).
7/9/16	Pte. J. A. Gillam, Battersea Rise (Died at Home).
16/9/16	Pte. J. W. Argent (Wounded).
18/9/16	Pte. C. H. Corderoy, Camberwell (Died of Wounds).
5/10/16	Pte. E. Y. Westcott (Wounded).
9/10/16	Pte. W. Law (Wounded).
17/11/16	L./Cpl. G. Perry, Dunmow (Died).
3/12/16	Lieut. and Q.M. E. J. Sayer (Wounded).
25/3/17	Pte. H. E. Hughes, Liverpool (Died of Wounds).
11/4/17	2/Lieut. J. F. Lingeman (Died of Wounds).
,,	Sgt. R. S. Grant, Castle Hedingham (Killed).
,,	Cpl. W. C. Bareham, Clacton (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Digby, Great Holland (Killed).
,,	Pte. J. Smith, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. Smith, Langham (Killed).
,,	Pte. T. A. Wright, Great Bentley (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. Young, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. T. E. Charlesworth, Fulham (Killed).
,,	S.S.M. W. C. Howard, Danbury (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Bright, Braintree (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. E. Bunting, Colchester (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. E. Rollinson, Woodbridge (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. F. Gosling, Southend (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. E. Guiver, Southend (Killed).
,,	S./S.S. Thomson, Stradishall (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. C. Hobrough, Parsons Heath (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. A. Holland, Newport, Essex (Killed).
,,	Tptr. A. T. Tibbenham, Bungay (Killed).
,,	Tptr. A. H. W. Stowell, Bulphan (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. Steward, Wivenhoe (Killed).
,,	Pte. D. T. Matthams, Aythorp Roding (Killed).
,,	Pte. C. W. Steward, West Thurrock (Killed).
,,	Pte. B. Smith, Weeley (Killed).
,,	Sgt. A. E. Smith, Terling (Killed).
,,	L./Cpl. F. E. Warren, Braintree (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. W. Bayman, Coalville (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. H. Baines, Castle Hedingham (Killed).
,,	Pte. G. Bassett, Saffron Walden (Killed).
,,	Sgt. E. May, Buntingford (Killed).
,,	Lt.-Col. F. H. D. C. Whitmore, D.S.O. (Wounded).
,,	Major A. Buxton, D.S.O. (Wounded).
,,	Major G. G. Gold (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

11/4/17	Major E. Hill (Wounded).
,,	Captain C. N. Gilbey (Wounded).
,,	Lieut. J. K. Swire (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. S. White (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. A. Winter Rose (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. R. C. Weatherby (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. G. Wear (Wounded).
,,	2/Lieut. W. Ritchie (Wounded).
,,	R.S.M. C. Farrell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. B. J. Stone (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. C. D. Packard (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Thorn (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. C. J. Midgley (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. H. Waller (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. F. Brunwin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. S. Cardy (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. Chopping (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. Waspe (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. G. Siddons (Wounded).
,,	S./S. N. C. Deacon (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Appleby (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Partridge (Wounded).
,,	S.S.M. W. W. McKellar (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. E. Gladwell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Etherden (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. W. Hume (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. W. C. Chappell (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. H. Bennett (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. J. Brown (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. E. T. Wakefield (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. S. Woods (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Andrews (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. E. Benson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. C. Carter (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Davis (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. J. Goodwin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. J. Hatley (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. D. Harvey (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Hodge (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. J. Jackaman (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Jopson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. H. Moorse (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. T. Peckam (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. G. Riddle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. Searles (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Travers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. W. Wilson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. D. Wood (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

11/4/17	Pte. H. Warren (Wounded).
,,	S.S.M. A. S. Tyler (Wounded).
,,	Pte. M. Goodinson (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. O. W. Bugg (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. G. S. Hodge (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. G. W. Payne (Wounded).
,,	F./Sgt. T. Meredith (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. S.S. W. S. Woodford (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. G. E. Rowell (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. C. Rowell (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. P. J. Green (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. J. Adams (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. A. Auger (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. H. Barrett (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Bradford (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. J. Britton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. O. J. Caton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. H. Crees (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. D. Deeks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. M. G. Dellow (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. Millard (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. J. C. Page (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. Rogers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. J. Rivers (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Searle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. W. Covill (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. C. Smith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Webb (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. C. Stock (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Radford (Wounded).
,,	Pte. P. J. Martin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. C. Sutton (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. K. Warren (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Wright (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Barker (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. R. Taylor (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. J. Bamber (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. W. French (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. G. Tolhurst (Wounded).
,,	Sgt./Tptr. G. Osborne (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. E. Peacock (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Baker (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. W. Cullum (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. D. Harvey (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. C. Corrall (Wounded).
,,	Pte. N. B. Daniels (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. W. Deeks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Gregory (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

11/4/17	Pte. A. E. Cracknell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. G. Burch (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Tompkins (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. T. Gooch (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. Knight (Wounded).
14/4/17	S./S. Corpl. H. R. C. Gouldstone, Finchingfield (Died at Home).
,,	Pte. G. Sergant, Clacton (Died at Home).
15/4/17	Pte. H. Travers, Gloucester (Killed).
4/6/17	Pte. J. F. Ashwin (Wounded).
27/6/17	L./Cpl. J. Robertson (Wounded).
2/7/17	Sgt. W. Redgwell, Tolleshunt Darcy (Died of Wounds).
2/9/17	Major J. O. Parker (Wounded).
24/10/17	Pte. A. Newton, Mansfield Woodhouse (Killed).
18/11/17	Sgt. W. H. Pennal, Forest Gate (Died).
1/12/17	Capt. M. Dudding (Wounded).
22/12/17	Pte. F. M. Pilgrim, Notley (Killed).
,,	Pte. S. Humphrey, Milton, Cambs. (Killed).
,,	Pte. K. Putland (Wounded).
,,	Pte. H. Charters (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. C. Martin (Missing, Prisoner of War).
6/1/18	Pte. C. R. Keene (Wounded).
26/2/18	L./Cpl. A. H. Stevens (Wounded).
21/3/18	Lieut. F. C. Meyer (Wounded).
30/3/18	Pte. J. G. Pyle (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. E. Wright (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. Savill (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. R. Gosling (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Wise (Wounded).
1/4/18	Pte. G. W. Bradley, Great Waltham (Killed).
,,	Pte. G. Searle (Missing, believed Killed).
,,	2/Lieut. C. A. Collis (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. F. R. Austin (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. M. Palmer (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. C. Foster (Wounded).
,,	Pte. J. Douce (Wounded).
,,	Pte. E. J. Cook (Wounded).
2/4/18	Pte. W. C. Kipping (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Carpenter (Wounded).
22/4/18	Pte. M. A. D. Moss, attached 2nd Dragoon Guards, Southend (Killed).
,,	Pte. W. H. Barrett (Wounded).
4/4/18	Pte. A. H. Barber (Wounded).
6/4/18	Lieut. R. D. Holland (Wounded).
9/4/18	L./Sgt. J. Barbour (Wounded).
28/4/18	Lieut. D. Morgan (Wounded and Missing, Prisoner of War).
,,	Pte. E. A. Gill (Wounded and Missing, Prisoner of War).

Digitized by Google

16/6/18	Pte. A. C. Corrall (Wounded).
22/6/18	Pte. W. T. Jeeves, Girtford (Died of Wounds).
8/8/18	S./S. C. Chapman (Missing, Prisoner of War).
,,	Pte. J. R. Beeson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. T. B. Ward (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. E. Peacock (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. G. S. Channings (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. L. W. Barker (Wounded).
,,	S./S. A. Mattocks (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. H. Goldsmith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. Cloughton (Wounded).
,,	S./S. W. Lester (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Speller (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. Lees (Wounded).
,,	Cpl. F. Atkins (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. J. Hall (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. Harden (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. L. W. Hammond (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Jopson (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. Peckham (Wounded).
,,	Sgt. W. Plowright (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Armour (Wounded).
,,	Pte. C. Giddings (Wounded).
,,	Pte. F. W. Nicholls (Wounded).
9/8/18	Sgt. J. Bruce (Wounded).
,,	Pte. S. A. Anderson (Wounded).
,,	Pte. A. Gaymer (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. E. Savill (Wounded).
,,	Pte. L. S. Blackwell (Wounded).
,,	Pte. M. C. Savage (Wounded).
10/8/18	Sgt. H. E. Bolleter (Killed).
,,	Pte. E. Tompkins, Southend (Killed).
,,	Tptr. W. Gregory (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. A. Whitten (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Andrews (Wounded).
,,	Pte. G. Scott-Bartie (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. W. Mascall (Wounded).
14/8/18	Pte. P. Burton (Wounded).
21/8/18	Pte. P. Pryke (Wounded).
24/8/18	Pte. F. G. Happs (Wounded).
3/9/18	Pte. H. S. Hawkins (Wounded).
28/9/18	Pte. W. J. Revell (Died of Pneumonia).
8/10/18	L./Cpl. E. Smith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. V. J. Goldsmith (Wounded).
,,	Pte. W. Mann (Wounded).
,,	L./Cpl. A. W. Hawes (Wounded).
9/10/18	Lieut. S. J. Tufnell (Wounded).
,,	Lieut. W. Ritchie (Wounded).

Digitized by Google

10/10/18 Sgt. E. V. Freeman, Great Yarmouth (Died at Home).
,, Pte. P. W. Thurston, London, E. (Died at Sea).
12/10/18 Pte. W. Appleby (Wounded).
25/10/18 Pte. W. Kennedy, Bakewell (Died of Pneumonia).
28/10/18 Pte. F. Bradbury (Died of Pneumonia).
29/10/18 Capt. A. Winter Rose, M.C. (Died of Influenza).
31/10/18 Pte. H. F. Gilliatt (Died of Pneumonia).
21/11/18 Pte. S. M. Pratt (Died of Pneumonia).
28/11/18 L./Cpl. L. W. Henley (Died of Pneumonia).
7/12/18 Pte. C. Harris (Died of Pneumonia).
27/12/18 Pte. G. C. Gardiner (Died of Pneumonia).
14/2/19 Pte. A. N. Whyman (Died of Pneumonia).
20/2/19 Pte. A. Macdonald (Died of Pneumonia).

Officers and Other Ranks of the Essex Yeomanry who were killed in action or died whilst serving with, or after being transferred to, other units.

29/5/15 Pte. C. Abbott, 1st Australian Field Ambulance (Killed at Anzac Cove).
6/8/15 Pte. J. Flux, 10th Australian Light Horse (Killed in Gallipoli).
24/12/15 Lieut. M. Head, Royal Flying Corps (Killed).
10/7/16 Pte. W. P. A. Pound, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
29/7/16 Capt. H. R. Robertson, 2/1st Essex Yeomanry (Died).
15/9/16 Sgt. A. J. Baynes, Civil Service Rifles (Killed).
20/9/16 L/Cpl. H. M. Chaplin, 2nd Bn. Norfolk Regiment (Died of Dysentery in Mesopotamia).
17/10/16 Cpl. L. W. Plane, R.F.A. (Killed).
Pte. E. Clarke (Killed).
27/3/17 Pte. A. E. W. Steel, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
30/3/17 Lieut. P. T. Wilson-Yirrell, South Midland Brigade, R.F.A. (Killed).
9/4/17 Pte. Sulyman, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/4/17 Pte. Cressey, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/4/17 Pte. Anderson, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
11/4/17 L./Cpl. G. J. Jones, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
11/4/17 Pte. W. Brown (Killed).
11/4/17 Pte. J. H. Arrol, 8th M.G. Sqdn. (Killed).
11/4/17 Pte. W. H. Metcalf, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
11/4/17 Pte. G. C. Foster, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
14/4/17 Pte. A. Harrington, 1st Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
19/4/17 Pte. Wagstaff, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
22/4/17 Pte. F. C. Carter, 11th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
29/4/17 Pte. G. F. C. Chaplin, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).

Digitized by Google

30/4/17	Pte. J. Winter, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
/5/17	Pte. F. H. G. Carpenter, Canadian Infantry (Killed).
9/5/17	Pte. A. Parmenter (Prisoner of War, Died at Darmstadt).
10/5/17	Pte. W. Pooley, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
11/5/17	Pte. L. C. Cooper, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
17/5/17	2/Lieut. F. C. Osburn, The Essex Regiment (Killed).
18/5/17	Pte. F. Sewell, 4th Dragoon Guards (Died in Hospital at Aldershot).
16/6/17	Lieut. D. R. C. Lloyd, R.A.F. (Killed).
17/7/17	Pte. F. L. Saville, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
17/7/17	Pte. F. Lavender, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
3/8/17	Pte. S. J. Revett, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/10/17	Capt. J. W. Egerton-Green, 1st Bn. Rifle Brigade (Died of Wounds).
19/10/17	Pte. C. H. Perry (Killed).
21/11/17	Pte. A. Saltmarsh, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
30/11/17	L./Cpl. W. F. Holyfield, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
4/1/18	Lieut. P. D. Parker, R.A.F. (Killed).
10/1/18	Pte. R. Joslin, 1/4th Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
21/3/18	Pte. H. Larke, 2/8th Lancashire Fusiliers (Killed).
21/3/18	Lieut. F. S. Osborne, 2/5th Lincolnshire Regiment (Killed).
21/3/18	Pte. H. C. Barrett, 11th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
22/3/18	Pte. W. Schooling, M.G.C. Cavalry (Killed).
27/3/18	Sgt. R. D. Turnell (Killed).
30/3/18	Lieut. H. W. Mann, 178th Brigade, R.F.A. (Killed).
1/4/18	Sgt. Sparrow, 8th M.G. Squadron (Killed).
4/4/18	Pte. A. J. Savage, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
9/4/18	Pte. H. W. Phillips, 2nd Canadian M.R. Battalion (Killed).
12/4/18	2/Lieut. T. H. Christy, 10th Bn. The Essex Regiment. (Killed).
24/4/18	Lieut. K. C. Herron, 82nd Sqdn. R.A.F. (Killed).
26/4/18	Pte. A. Medhurst, 1/4 K.O.R. Lancaster Regiment (Killed).
26/4/18	Pte. C. H. French, King's Own Royal Lancaster Regiment (Killed).
29/4/18	Pte. W. J. Walker, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
/5/18	Pte. F. J. Davie (Died in France).
11/5/18	Pte. J. Pooley, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).

Digitized by Google

19/5/18	Pte. J. Fuller, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
2/6/18	Pte. G. Hewett, M.M., 4th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Died of Wounds).
14/6/18	Pte. E. R. Banks, King's Own Royal Lancaster Regiment (Died of Wounds).
5/7/18	Sgt. F. H. Tyler, Australian Infantry (Killed).
13/7/18	Capt. E. P. W. Wedd, R.A.M.C. (Killed).
2/8/18	Lieut. Sneddon, R.A.F. (Killed in Egypt).
8/8/18	Pte. H. E. C. Usher (Killed).
,,	Pte. H. Boyden (Killed).
,,	Pte. F. A. Willingale, 7th City of London Regiment (Killed).
15/8/18	Pte. O. S. Poll, 11th Suffolks (Killed).
23/8/18	Pte. Thorn (Killed).
26/8/18	Pte. Smith, 7th London Regiment (Died of Wounds).
2/9/18	Pte. A. Bunce, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
2/9/18	Pte. W. A. Garner, 2nd Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
5/9/18	Pte. F. J. Barkas, The Essex Regiment (Killed).
8/9/18	Pte. F. C. Sutton, M.M., Tank Corps (Died of Wounds).
8/9/18	Pte. E. H. Moles, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
14/9/18	Pte. F. G. Canler, 10th Royal Fusiliers (Killed).
21/9/18	Pte. E. R. Gater, 9th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
23/9/18	Pte. A. Fayres, 11th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
23/9/18	Pte. G. Denton, K.O.R. Lancaster Regiment (Died of Wounds).
27/9/18	Capt. L. M. Woodhouse, 59th Sqdn. R.A.F. (Killed).
27/9/18	Pte. S. Francis, 1st Bn. Royal West Kent Regiment (Killed).
2/10/18	Cpl. G. E. Rowell, 15th Bn. Hampshire Regiment (Killed).
2/10/18	Pte. Cook (Killed).
6/10/18	Pte. W. S. Whur, Machine Gun Corps Cavalry (Killed).
7/10/18	Pte. W. Godfrey (Killed).
8/10/18	Lieut. Burford, The Essex Regiment (Died of Wounds).
8/10/18	Pte. A. G. A. Day, 1st Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
23/10/18	Pte. L. W. Tydeman, 2nd Lincolnshire Regiment, Lewis Gun Section (Killed).
24/10/18	L./Cpl. W. Blaker, 11th Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
24/10/18	L./Cpl. T. E. Hardy, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
24/10/18	Pte. E. Meaby, 11th Bn. Cambridgeshire Regiment (Killed).
27/10/18	Pte. H. R. Linsell, Labour Corps (Died).
27/10/18	Pte. C. Bones, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
27/10/18	Pte. F. Stoper, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).

Digitized by Google

27/10/18 Pte. H. Knowles, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Died of Wounds).
27/10/18 Pte. G. Holmes, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
27/10/18 Pte. Morris, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Killed).
31/10/18 Pte. L. L. Little, 11th Bn. Suffolk Regiment (Died of Wounds).
31/10/18 Lieut. T. N. Browett, 3/5th The Essex Regiment, transferred King's African Rifles (Died of Influenza at Dar-es-Salaam).
Pte. Elliott (Died of Wounds in France).
Pte. J. A. McLoughing (Wounded, believed Killed).
/11/18 Lieut. A. Smoothy, London Regiment (Died of Wounds).
/11/18 Pte. H. L. Tate (Died in France).
4/11/18 Pte. R. B. Appleby, 10th Bn. The Essex Regiment (Killed).
27/11/18 Pte. L. H. Jenkyn (Died of Influenza at Rouen).
Pte. F. C. Miller (Died).
Pte. B. Miller (Died).
Pte. A. Andrews (Died).
2/12/18 Lieut. T. S. Driver, 4th Reserve Regiment Dragoons (Died of Influenza).
28/2/19 Pte. S. E. Newson (Died of Pneumonia).

Casualties sustained by Officers and Other Ranks whilst serving with the Essex Yeomanry: Killed, officers, 8; other ranks, 131—139. Wounded, 28 and 296—324. Prisoners of War—officer, 1 (wounded); 3 (one wounded)—4. Total, 467.

Officers and Other Ranks who were killed whilst serving with other units: Officers, 18; other ranks, 92.

Grand Total: 577.

Also:—

O. Hughes.
L. B. Fitch.
C. W. Barker.
T. Row (or Rous).
E. V. Snowden.

A memorial to the members of the Essex Yeomanry who fell in action or died from disease was erected in Chelmsford Cathedral. The tablet was unveiled by Major-General Sir Henry Hodgson, K.C.M.G., C.B., C.V.O., on Sunday, July 2nd, 1922, and dedicated by the late Bishop of Chelmsford (Dr. Watts Ditchfield).

The Essex Yeomanry also subscribed £150—the largest amount received from any Yeomanry regiment—towards the erection of the Cavalry Memorial in London, which was unveiled by F.M. Earl French, of Ypres, K.P., G.C.B., O.M., on May 21st, 1924.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX V.

EXTRACTS FROM ORDER BOOK OF THE 3rd REGIMENT, ESSEX LOCAL MILITIA.

(Copied from the Adjutant's Order Book by J. Hailes, Sergeant and Adjutant's Clerk).

This ms. notebook is in the possession of Southend Public Library and is published by the courtesy of the Committee and of the Librarian (Mr. W. Pollitt, F.L.A.).

May 30th, 1809.—The Regiment will get their arms and clothing complete as speedily as possible. The dress of the men for the first and second morning drills will be white jackets, trousers and gaiters, with forage caps, and all parades and drills with arms. The evening parade will be in their proper dress clothing. The officers are particularly cautioned to be correct in their own dress, as ordered yesterday. They are also cautioned against wearing round hats in the streets with their regimentals, which irregularity has been observed by the Commandant. He trusts for the future that an attention to a propriety of dress will be universally observed by every officer in the Regiment when off duty as well as on parade. The officers are also reminded that they are expected to attend all drills as well as parades, unless they have leave to the contrary, and the Commandant most particularly desires that they will be punctual as to time and be ready to fall in with their Company exactly at the time ordered: Morning drills—Private parade, half-past five; officers fall in at 6. Morning parade, half-past nine; officers fall in at 10. Evening parade—half-past five; officers fall in at 6. The time to be taken by the Exchange clock. (During the embodiment six companies moved into the Barracks and the remainder, four companies, who had been billeted in Lexden and the outskirts of Colchester, were transferred to the billets thus vacated).

June 17th, 1809.—The Commandant has the pleasure of communicating to the Regiment Colonel Wynch's entire approbation of the review of this morning, who expressed himself in the most handsome terms highly satisfied with the improvement both officers and men have made in the very short period they have been embodied. The Commandant also begs leave to add his acknowledgments to the officers for their attention and to express his satisfaction at the steady conduct of the men.

June 19th, 1809.—Lieut.-Colonel Bawtree begs leave to offer to Lieut.-Colonel Round and to Major Welford his very sincere thanks for the great assistance he has received from their unwearied exertions during a month of unceasing and arduous duty in the formation of the 3rd Regiment of Essex

Digitized by Google

Local Militia and to whose most attentive and unremitted diligence is to be attributed the commendable progress which the Regiment has made in military knowledge. To the captains and subalterns he also requests to make his very sincere acknowledgments for the attention paid to their respective duties and for the careful regard they have shown to the comfort as well as the regular conduct of those immediately under their command. To the staff officers the Commandant feels much indebted for the extraordinary exertions which they have each been called upon to make and which have been so beneficially employed in the service of the Regiment. The Commandant requests that the commanding officers of companies will make known to the non-commissioned officers and men on their dismissal to-morrow the high sense of their good and soldierlike conduct evinced in their sobriety, their ready obedience to the commands of their superiors and their general quiet and peaceful behaviour.

June 21st, 1809.—The permanent sergeants, corporals and drummers are ordered to parade every Monday, Wednesday and Friday, at six o'clock, in the Castle Bailey for drill, until further orders, to commence Monday next. Ordered also that the permanent sergeants, corporals and drummers attend divine service every Sunday morning and parade for that purpose in the Castle Bailey. Every man belonging to the Regiment upon permanent pay is placed under the command of the Adjutant and will obey his orders accordingly.

October 6th, 1809.—The permanent sergeants, corporals and drummers are ordered to attend a church parade in the Castle Bailey, on the 25th day of this month of October, at 10 o'clock in the forenoon, being the day on which His Majesty enters the 50th year of his reign, and to be observed as a day of public thanksgiving and rejoicing.

May 15th, 1810.—The Regiment will parade every morning at half-past nine in the Ordnance Field, and the private parades will be formed precisely at nine, at which one subaltern officer is ordered to attend. No private parades will be allowed in the streets. Three companies may be permitted to parade in the Castle Bailey and three on St. John's Green, and the remainder in the Ordnance Field.

May 15th, 1810.—The credit of the Regiment will be cried down and the sergeants of companies are particularly ordered to caution the landlords of the different public houses against trusting the men that are billeted upon them, as well as any others belonging to the Regiment, and likewise to caution the tradesmen with whom they deal against giving credit, as the Commandant will not be answerable for any debts the men may contract.

May 17th, 1810.—The Commandant considers that it would be more convenient that the private parades should all be held

Digitized by Google

in the Barrack Field and he orders them all to be held there accordingly. The Commandant was sorry to observe very great noise and irregularity in the men this morning on their return from duty to their quarters in the town, and he cautions them against future disorderly conduct and desires that any officer or non-commissioned officer will immediately confine any men they may see so offending. It is particularly ordered that no man be seen in the streets otherwise than regimentally dressed.

May 27th, 1810.—The Regiment will parade to-morrow morning at half-past eight precisely, private parade at 8. The left wing will be supplied with six rounds of ball cartridge per man and will march to Fingringhoe Marshes for practice.

May 28th, 1810.—It being intended to consecrate the colours to-morrow, the parade is ordered at 10 o'clock, private parade at half-past nine. The Regiment, both officers and men, are desired to be in full-dress—white pantaloons, gorget, etc. The men are particularly cautioned to be clean and neatly dressed. Their arms to be flinted and three rounds of blank cartridge issued to each man.

May 31st, 1810.—The Regiment will be reviewed to-morrow at Lexden Heath, by Major-General Moncrieff. The officers will be dressed in white pantaloons, gorgets, etc. The men in review order, full dress, clean shaved, with clean linen, etc., arms flinted and furnished with nine rounds of blank cartridge per man for 40 file per company. Recruits to have no ammunition. Ordered that every man attends who is able, no leave to be given to anyone, and as few a number of cooks allowed as possible. Private parades at 8 o'clock and the parade to be formed and ready to march from the ground by half-past 8 o'clock.

June 1st, 1810.—The General having expressed his entire approbation of the appearance and discipline of the Regiment at the review of this morning, the Commandant has only to offer his congratulations on the occasion and to return his best thanks to the officers, as also to the men, for their attention to the duty of the day.

June 3rd, 1810.—The Regiment will parade to-morrow at half-past nine precisely, private parades at quarter-past eight. To be furnished with three rounds of blank cartridge per man of 40 file per company. The recruits to be left in the Ordnance Field and drilled by the sergeants. The Regiment will march to Lexden Heath and join the regiments from the garrison to fire in honour of the King's birthday. Officers in full dress and the men are desired to be particularly clean and regimentally dressed. (The parade included Royal Horse Artillery, one squadron, 5th Dragoon Guards, one Light Brigade, Royal Artillery, 4th, 43rd, 20th Regiments and 3rd Essex Local Militia, one squadron 5th Dragoon Guards. A Heavy Brigade of Royal Artillery was placed on the right of the line to fire a royal salute).

Digitized by Google

June 3rd, 1810.—The Commandant cautions the men against any irregularity or improper behaviour either in the streets or in their quarters of the evening and night of 4th June, as any disorderly conduct will most certainly be severely punished, but he flatters himself that as their behaviour hitherto has been so satisfactory to him and creditable to themselves, he shall have the happiness of dismissing them with his unqualified thanks for their good conduct to the last hour of their being assembled. (On June 5th the Commandant again expressed, as the year before, his thanks to all ranks).

May 28th, 1811.—The Regiment will parade to-morrow with their colours in review order precisely at 8 o'clock and march to Lexden Heath for inspection, private parades half-past 7 o'clock. The men to be clean shaved and dressed in regimentals, arms flinted and provided with ten rounds of blank cartridge per man for the front and centre ranks, the rear ranks to have no ammunition. The recruits will also march to Lexden, their arms to be flinted for inspection, to have no ammunition. Every man to attend that can possibly march, the guard only excepted, leaving as few cooks as possible.

May 29th, 1811.—The Commandant has the satisfaction of informing the officers, non-commissioned officers and privates of the Regiment that Major-General Sir John Sherbrooke was pleased to express himself satisfied with the inspection of this morning, particularly so under the unfavourable circumstances of bad weather, and to add that he should make a favourable report of the Regiment.

May 31st, 1811.—The Commandant acknowledges with pleasure the regular conduct and good order and discipline of the non-commissioned officers and men generally, and regrets that there should be any exceptions to his unqualified approbation of every individual's conduct, but he is aware, in so large an assemblage, there will be men who are led astray by their ignorance of what is right and the want of a due consideration of the necessity of military discipline and subordination, and he is confident that this regret is no less felt by all the regular and well-disposed in the Regiment than it is by himself. With sentiments of goodwill to all, the Commandant wishes them well until the next period of exercise.

May 19th, 1812.—The permanent non-commissioned officers are ordered to attend early in the High Street and collect together their respective companies and deliver to them their arms, clothing and accoutrements, desiring their men to get their hair cut close and appear at the evening private parade in the Ordnance Field clean dressed, with their arms clean and in good order, cautioning them to have their clothing aired before they put it on. . . . . Such men of the Regiment who are now present and who have been enrolled on or before 1st May, 1809, will be entitled to an allowance of 7s. each for their clothing, provided it is good

Digitized by Google

and serviceable, and also of 5s. 4d. for their necessaries, if complete, or they will be entitled to take away their clothing and necessaries when their four years of service is expired, but it must this year be returned into store, to be ready in case the Regiment may be again called out, when every man will be liable to serve until his four years is fully complete and ended.

May 20th, 1812.—It is ordered that in future all the companies are always formed three deep, except they are particularly ordered to the contrary, and that this is to be understood as the general formation of the company when in battalion, and the commanding officers of companies are desired to select and size their men accordingly.

May 22nd, 1812.—Such men as are willing to extend their services for another four years and whose present period of service expires in the ensuing year and who are not more than 30 years of age, nor have more than two children under 14 years of age, are desired to signify their consent to the officer commanding their companies, who will be furnished with a paper for the men's signature. Each man whose further service is accepted will be entitled to a bounty of two guineas, to be paid upon his enrolment before the Deputy Lieutenants and Justices at their Sub-Division Meeting. (Men enrolled previous to April 20th, 1812, were entitled to two years' exemption from liability to service in the Regular Militia and those after that date to one year's exemption).

May 30th, 1812.—The commanding officers of companies are desired to warn their men against a practice of what they are pleased to call ploughing, which is, running the butt of their musquet along the Ordnance Field when assembled for their private parades, by which many of the butts are injured and several of the pieces must be new stocked, which the Armourer has orders to get done and charge to the officers commanding companies, who are directed to stop the expense from the pay and allowances due to the men whose arms are thus injured.

June 1st, 1812.—The Commandant has the pleasure of communicating to the officers and men of the Regiment, by desire of Major-General Robertson, that the inspection of this morning under very unfavourable circumstances of extreme bad weather has exceeded the General's expectation and that he was fully satisfied with the appearance and steady discipline of the Regiment. (The inspection was at Lexden Heath).

June 2nd, 1812.—The officers were congratulated that the 3rd Essex Local Militia had attained "a state of efficiency as nearly perfect as the nature of the service and the limited time of the different periods of training will permit," whilst the men were dismissed with the Commandant's "entire approbation of their good conduct."

May 26th, 1813.—Commanding officers are desired to enquire if any men in their respective companies are now serving whose

Digitized by Google

four years of service expires before the termination of the present training period, and if there are such men they must be immediately discharged and they are desired particularly to take notice that neither pay nor necessaries can be drawn for any such men.

June 1st, 1813.—The Commandant has the satisfaction of communicating to the officers, non-commissioned officers and privates under his command the entire approbation of Major-General Robertson at the inspection of the Regiment, and as the District Orders given this day contain a most creditable testimony of the progress made by the Regiment, the Commandant cannot deny himself the high gratification of conveying those orders to every one in the Regiment, trusting that the applause thus gained by their exertions and attention to their duty will act as an incitement to a still greater attainment of military discipline. Extract from District Order, June 1st: Major-General Robertson was yesterday extremely gratified by the appearance of the 3rd Essex Local Militia Regiment commanded by Colonel Bawtree. The men of this corps, almost entirely formed of new recruits, showed a surprising progress by an exactness of march and formation in the most essential movements which the Major-General could not have expected that this or any new raised corps could have attained in so short a period of time. To the attention of their commanding and other officers, the good dispositions of the men themselves and the excellent system of drill introduced by the non-commissioned officers of the King's Own Stafford Regiment of Militia, a well-merited praise on this occasion is justly due.

June 2nd, 1813.—The Commandant referred to Major-General Robertson's order and stated that "his greatest pleasure is derived from the consideration that he has the high honour of being placed at the head of those whose services have called forth such distinguished notice and applause." He also acknowledged the good conduct of all other ranks.

November 1st, 1813.—Notice of imprisonment of a private for not attending the last annual training—the first case that had occurred in the Regiment.

The last order was dated June 21st, 1814, detailing the personnel of the permanent staff, which consisted of the Adjutant, Captain Smith; Quartermaster, Richard Tuck; Surgeon, H. Perkins; Sergeant-Major, J. Calver, with five sergeants, five corporals, drum major, James Dennis, and eight drummers.

Digitized by Google

ESSEX IMPERIAL YEOMANRY AT COLCHESTER, 1905.

Essex Yeomanry's Itinerary in France and Belgium, 1914-1918.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google